# ON MODEL SELECTION FROM A FINITE FAMILY OF POSSIBLY MISSPECIFIED TIME SERIES MODELS 

By Hsiang-Ling Hsu*, ${ }^{*}$, Ching-Kang Ing $^{\dagger, 2}$ and Howell Tong ${ }^{\ddagger, \S, 3}$<br>National University of Kaohsiung*, National Tsing Hua University ${ }^{\dagger}$, University of Electronic Science \& Technology ${ }^{\ddagger}$ and London School of Economics ${ }^{\S}$

Consider finite parametric time series models. "I have $n$ observations and $k$ models, which model should I choose on the basis of the data alone" is a frequently asked question in many practical situations. This poses the key problem of selecting a model from a collection of candidate models, none of which is necessarily the true data generating process (DGP). Although existing literature on model selection is vast, there is a serious lacuna in that the above problem does not seem to have received much attention. In fact, existing model selection criteria have avoided addressing the above problem directly, either by assuming that the true DGP is included among the candidate models and aiming at choosing this DGP, or by assuming that the true DGP can be asymptotically approximated by an increasing sequence of candidate models and aiming at choosing the candidate having the best predictive capability in some asymptotic sense. In this article, we propose a misspecificationresistant information criterion (MRIC) to address the key problem directly. We first prove the asymptotic efficiency of MRIC whether the true DGP is among the candidates or not, within the fixed-dimensional framework. We then extend this result to the high-dimensional case in which the number of candidate variables is much larger than the sample size. In particular, we show that MRIC can be used in conjunction with a high-dimensional model selection method to select the (asymptotically) best predictive model across several high-dimensional misspecified time series models.

1. Introduction. Let us consider finite parametric time series models. In the vast literature of model selection, problems tend to be classified into two categories according to whether the true data generating process (DGP) is included among the collection of candidate models. The first category (referred to as category I) assumes that the true DGP belongs to a stipulated collection of candidate models,

[^0]and the objective of model selection is simply choosing the true DGP. A model selection criterion is said to be consistent if it can choose the (most parsimonious) true DGP with probability tending to 1 . In time series models as well as in linear regression, Bayesian information criterion (BIC) [Schwarz (1978)] has been shown to have this property; see, for example, Nishii (1984), Rao and Wu (1989) and Wei (1992). On the other hand, Akaike's information criterion (AIC) [Akaike (1974)] and Mallows' $C_{p}$ [Mallows (1973)], which tend to choose overfitting models, are not consistent in category I (e.g., Shibata (1976) and Shao (1997)). The second category (category II) assumes that the true DGP is not one of the candidate models. In this category, choosing the model having the best predictive capabilities becomes the objective. When the true DGP is a linear regression model with infinitely many parameters and the number of predictor (explanatory) variables in the candidate models increases to infinity with the sample size such that the corresponding approximation error vanishes asymptotically, Shibata (1981) and Li (1987) showed that AIC and Mallows' $C_{p}$ possess asymptotic efficiency, in the sense that these criteria can choose the model whose finite-sample mean squared prediction error (MSPE) is asymptotically equivalent to the smallest one among those of the candidate models. In contrast, BIC fails to achieve asymptotic efficiency under category II; see Shibata (1980), Shao (1997) and Ing and Wei (2005). For a survey of the performance of various model selection criteria in both categories, see Shao (1997).

It is usually difficult for practitioners to perceive which category applies. Since, as mentioned in the previous paragraph, most existing criteria cannot simultaneously enjoy consistency in category I and asymptotic efficiency in category II, the choice of selection criteria has become a key point of contention over the past decades. For example, Ing (2007) and Yang (2007) have proposed similar adaptive procedures. They first compare two models selected by BIC, one for partial data points and another for full data points. They adopt AIC if the two selected models are different suggesting the plausibility of category II, and BIC otherwise. By suitably deciding the number of partial data points in the first step, they have shown that the proposed two-step procedure possesses consistency and asymptotic efficiency in categories I and II, respectively. More recently, Liu and Yang (2011) devised the so-called "parametricness index" to determine between categories I and II, and Zhang and Yang (2015) proposed using cross-validation to select between AIC and BIC in the absence of prior information on the underlying category. For a related result on solving the AIC-BIC dilemma from the point of view of cumulative risk, see van Erven, Grünwald and de Rooij (2012).

While these recent efforts to resolve the controversy between AIC and BIC are novel, they mainly contribute to the increasing-dimensional (ID) framework, which requires that the number of candidate variables to grow to infinity with the sample size, $n$. However, in many realistic situations, we are often faced with the problem of selecting a model from a finite and fixed collection of candidate models, none of which is necessarily the true DGP. It was, in fact, this problem

TABLE 1
Increasing-dimensional case (\# of candidates increases with $n$ )

| Criteria | Case I: | Case II: | Case III: |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | The true model is included as a candidate. Goal: Consistency | The true model is NOT included as a candidate. Goal: Asymp. efficiency for prediction. | No info. on whether the true model is included. Goal: Consistency when the true model is included + asymptotic efficiency when the true model is not included. |
| AIC | No | Yes | No |
| BIC | Yes | No | No |
| GAIC | No | Yes | No |
| GBIC | Yes | No | No |
| Two-stage IC | Yes | Yes | Yes |

that Akaike was originally trying to solve. He said (Akaike (1978), page 217), "... at some stage, we have at hand several models which are the candidates for our final choice." Although existing literature on model selection is vast, the above problem does not seem to have received much attention. This motivates us to ask whether there exists a model selection procedure that can perform well in both categories and within the fixed-dimensional (FD) framework in which the number of candidate models does not change with $n$, thus filling a serious lacuna in the vast literature on model selection.

In this article, we propose a misspecification-resistant information criterion (MRIC). Specifically, we prove that MRIC, within the FD framework, possesses asymptotic efficiency in the sense of (3.6) whether the true DGP belongs to the candidate models or not. The MRIC has additional advantages. First, it is applicable to $h$-step prediction of time series data with $h \geq 1$. In particular, by changing the prediction lead times in the MRIC formula, the asymptotic efficiency of MRIC is guaranteed for each $h \geq 1$. Second, unlike the resolutions proposed for the ID case (e.g., Ing (2007), Yang (2007) and Zhang and Yang (2015)), MRIC can achieve asymptotic efficiency on its own without the help of additional/auxiliary criteria. Indeed, there are already several "single-step" model selection procedures proposed to combat model misspecification, for example, TIC [Takeuchi (1976)], GIC [Konishi and Kitagawa (1996)] and GBIC and GBIC $p$ [Lv and Liu (2014)]. However, it seems decidedly difficult to justify their asymptotic efficiency within the FD framework; see Section S5 of the Supplementary Material for this paper [Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019)]. We summarize the performance of major model selection procedures discussed above in the form of the two tables; Table 1 is for the ID framework and Table 2 for the FD framework.

TABLE 2
Fixed-dimensional case (\# of candidates is fixed with n)

| Criteria | Case I: <br> Consistency | Case II: Asymp. <br> efficiency | Case III: Consistency + <br> Asymp. efficiency |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| AIC | No | No | No |
| BIC | Yes | No | No |
| GAIC | No | No | No |
| GBIC | Yes | No | No |
| GBIC $_{p}$ | Yes | No | No |
| MRIC | Yes | Yes | Yes |

When several high-dimensional and (possibly) misspecified time series models are entertained, MRIC can also be used in conjunction with high-dimensional model selection methods to choose good predictive models. Note that highdimensional model selection problems have been extensively investigated over the past decade. However, most studies are devoted to the case where observations are independent over time. Recent papers of Basu and Michailidis (2015) and Wu and Wu (2016) are among the few dedicated to high-dimensional time series models. Although some desirable asymptotic properties of the Lasso estimates (Tibshirani (1996)) have been established by these authors under correct model specification, the question of how to choose the best predictive model across several different high-dimensional misspecified time series models still remains untouched. To fill this gap, we start by introducing a three-step model selection procedure, $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim (Section 4.1 ), and apply the procedure to each high-dimensional model. We then suggest choosing the model that achieves the lowest MRIC value among those decided by OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim. This approach is shown to have forecast optimality in the sense of (4.15).

The rest of the paper is organized as follows. In Section 2.1, we provide an asymptotic expression for the finite-sample MSPE of the least squares predictor, which is valid regardless of whether the model is correctly or incorrectly specified. In Section 2.2, we list the technical conditions needed in Section 2.1 and discuss their suitability. Based on a consistent estimate of the expression obtained in Section 2.1, we propose our MRIC and prove its asymptotic efficiency within the FD framework in Section 3. Applications of MRIC to misspecified ARX models are also given in the same section. In Section 4, the results in Sections 2 and 3 are extended to high-dimensional models. We show that MRIC can be used together with $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim to achieve asymptotic efficiency in the sense of (4.15) when several high-dimensional and (possibly) misspecified models are simultaneously taken into account. We conclude in Section 5. A detailed discussion of model misspecification is provided in the Appendix. All proofs and an extension of MRIC to a class of nonlinear models are relegated to Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019). The finite-
sample performance of the proposed methods in both low- and high-dimensional cases is also illustrated via simulated and real data in Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019).

## 2. Mean squared prediction error under possible misspecification.

2.1. An asymptotic expression. Let $\left\{y_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t}\right\}=\left\{\left(x_{t, 1}, \ldots, x_{t, m}\right)^{\top}\right\}, m \geq 1$, be weakly stationary processes on the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. Given observations up to $n$, we are interested in forecasting $y_{n+h}, h \geq 1$, based on the following model:

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+h}=\alpha_{h}+\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}+\varepsilon_{t, h} \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}=\left(\beta_{1, h}, \ldots, \beta_{m, h}\right)^{\top}=\arg \min _{\mathbf{c} \in R^{m}} \mathrm{E}\left\{y_{t+h}-\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}\right)-\mathbf{c}^{\top}\left[\mathbf{x}_{t}-\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)\right]\right\}^{2}$ and $\alpha_{h}=\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}\right)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)$. Note that we allow that (i) $h \geq 1$, (ii) $\mathbf{x}_{t}$ contains both endogenous and exogenous variables, and (iii) $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ are serially correlated and correlated with $\mathbf{x}_{k}$ for $k \neq t$. Thus, model (2.1) actually represents very general situations beyond the special cases of multistep prediction in (possibly) misspecified AR models. In addition, we allow $\mathbf{x}_{t}$ to vary with $h$, but suppress its dependence on $h$ in order to simplify the notation.

To gain further insights into the effect of model misspecification on the correlations between $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{\mathbf{t}}\right\}$ and $\varepsilon_{t, h}$, we assume that the data are generated according to the following DGP:

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=a w_{t}+\varepsilon_{t+1} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $a \neq 0,\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$ is a sequence of independent and identically distributed (i.i.d.) random errors obeying $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1}\right)=0$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1}^{2}\right)>0$, and $w_{t}=\theta_{1} w_{t-1}+\theta_{2} w_{t-2}+\delta_{t}$ is a stationary $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ process, with $\theta_{1} \theta_{2} \neq 0$ and $\left\{\delta_{t}\right\}$ being a sequence of zero-mean i.i.d. random errors independent of $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$. We also let

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(\delta_{1}^{2}\right)=1-\theta_{2}^{2}-\left\{\theta_{1}^{2}\left(1+\theta_{2}\right) /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)\right\}
$$

yielding $\gamma_{w}(0)=1$, where $\gamma_{w}(j)=\mathrm{E}\left(w_{t} w_{t+j}\right)$. If one is interested in predicting $y_{n+2}$, then, in view of (2.2), a correctly specified model for two-step prediction is

$$
y_{t+2}=a \theta_{1} w_{t}+a \theta_{2} w_{t-1}+\varepsilon_{t, 2}^{(0)}
$$

where $\varepsilon_{t, 2}^{(0)}=\varepsilon_{t+2}+a \delta_{t+1}$. It is easy to see that $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, 2}^{(0)} w_{t-j}\right)=0$ for $j \geq 0$. On the other hand, if a misspecified two-step prediction model,

$$
y_{t+2}=\beta w_{t}+\varepsilon_{t, 2}
$$

is used, where $\beta=\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+2} w_{t}\right)=a \theta_{1}+a \theta_{2} \theta_{1} /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)$ and $\varepsilon_{t, 2}=\varepsilon_{t, 2}^{(0)}-a \theta_{2}\left[\left\{\theta_{1} /\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)\right\} w_{t}-w_{t-1}\right]$, then $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, 2} w_{t-j}\right)=\left[-a \theta_{2} /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)\right]\left(\gamma_{w}(j+1)-\gamma_{w}(j-\right.$ 1)) $\neq 0$ for $j \geq 1$ although $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, 2} w_{t}\right)=0$ still follows. For a more detailed discussion on model misspecification, see the Appendix.

Model (2.1) can be rewritten as $y_{t+h}-\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}\right)=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}-\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)\right)+\varepsilon_{t, h}$. Having observed $y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}$ and $\mathbf{x}_{1}, \ldots, \mathbf{x}_{n}$, we may replace $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}\right)$ by $\bar{y}$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)$ by $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$, where $\bar{y}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} y_{t}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{x}}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \mathbf{x}_{t}$. Although $y_{t+h}-\bar{y}$ and $\mathbf{x}_{t}-\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ constitute triangular arrays, the difference between $y_{t+h}-\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}\right)$ and $y_{t+h}-\bar{y}$ and that between $\mathbf{x}_{t}-\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)$ and $\mathbf{x}_{t}-\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ vanish asymptotically. In order to simplify the exposition, we assume throughout the paper that $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t}\right)=0$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}\right)=\mathbf{0}$, and hence (2.1) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+h}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}+\varepsilon_{t, h} . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the least squares estimator (LSE),

$$
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}(h)=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} y_{t+h}=\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1} \frac{1}{N} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} y_{t+h}
$$

of $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}$, one can predict $y_{n+h}$ by

$$
\hat{y}_{n+h}=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{n},
$$

where $N=n-h$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{R}}=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}$.
In the next theorem, we provide an asymptotic expression for the finite-sample mean squared prediction error (MSPE) of $\hat{y}_{n+h}, \mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}\right)^{2}$, which is referred to as the MSPE in the sequel. One special feature of our expression is that it holds in both correctly and misspecified cases, thereby offering insight into pursuing asymptotically efficient model selection without knowing the category to which the underlying problem belongs.

THEOREM 2.1. Assume (2.3) and conditions (C1)-(C6) in Section 2.2. Then, for any $h \geq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}\right)^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\right)+n^{-1}\left(L_{h}+o(1)\right) \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L_{h}=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}\right)+2 \sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, s}\right)$, with $\mathbf{R}=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top}\right)$ being nonsingular and $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{1+s, h}\right)$.

The first term on the right-hand side of (2.4), referred to as the population MSPE, can be viewed as a measure of the goodness fit of model (2.3), whereas the second term on the right-hand side of (2.4) is related to the estimation error of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}(h)$. To appreciate the novelty of Theorem 2.1, assume that $y_{t}$ is a stationary $\mathrm{AR}(m)$ model,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=\sum_{i=1}^{m} a_{i} y_{t+1-i}+\epsilon_{t+1} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $1-a_{1} z-\cdots-a_{l} z^{m} \neq 0$ for all $|z| \leq 1$ and $\epsilon_{t}$ are independent random disturbances with $\mathrm{E}\left(\epsilon_{t}\right)=0$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\epsilon_{t}^{2}\right)=\sigma^{2}>0$ for all $t$. In view of (2.5), a correctly specified model for the $h$-step, $h \geq 1$, prediction is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+h}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}+\varepsilon_{t, h} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{x}_{t}=\left(y_{t}, \ldots, y_{t-m+1}\right)^{\top}, \varepsilon_{t, h}=\sum_{j=0}^{h-1} b_{j} \epsilon_{t+h-j}$, with $b_{j}$ satisfying $(1-$ $\left.a_{1} z-\cdots-a_{m} z^{m}\right) \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} b_{j} z^{j}=1$, and $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}=\mathbf{A}^{h-1}(m) \mathbf{a}$ with $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{m}\right)^{\top}$ and

$$
\mathbf{A}(m)=\binom{\left.\mathbf{a}\right|_{m-1}}{\mathbf{0}_{m-1}^{\top}}
$$

noting that $\mathbf{I}_{k}$ and $\mathbf{0}_{k}$, respectively, denote the $k$-dimensional identity matrix and the $k$-dimensional vector of zeros. Under suitable conditions on $\epsilon_{t}$ (see Section 2.2), it can be shown that (C1)-(C6) hold, and hence by Theorem 2.1 and some algebraic manipulations,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} n\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\right)\right\}=L_{h}=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \operatorname{cov}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{h-1} b_{j} \mathbf{x}_{1+j}\right)\right) \sigma^{2} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the key conclusion of Theorem 2 of Ing (2003). It is, however, important to note that when the model is misspecified, $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ and $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{k}, k<t\right\}$ are generally correlated, and hence the normalized MSPE,

$$
\begin{align*}
& N\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\right)\right\}  \tag{2.8}\\
& \quad=-2 \mathrm{E}\left\{\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\}+\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1} N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{2},
\end{align*}
$$

may have a nonnegligible "cross-product" term, $-2 \mathrm{E}\left\{\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\}$, which vanishes in the correctly specified case due to the independence between $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ and $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{k}, k \leq t\right\}$. In fact, it is shown in Ing (2003) that the rightmost term of (2.7) is solely attributed to the second term on the right-hand side of (2.8). At first sight, it would seem unrealistic to expect that $L_{h}$ is still valid under model misspecification, without any correction or adjustment. To our amazement, we are able to reveal $L_{h}$ 's generality for both correct and misspecified cases after discovering some unexpected cancelation between some components in the first and the second terms on the right-hand side of (2.8); see (S1.4) and (S1.5) in Section S1 of the Supplementary Material Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019).

Before closing this section, we remark that in the case of independent observations, a term similar to $L_{1}=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1,1}^{2}\right)\right)$ has been used by Takeuchi (1976) as a bias correction for the log-likelihood in order to obtain an asymptotically unbiased estimate of the Kullback-Leibler divergence between the true
model and a misspecified working model. For related discussion, see Stone (1977), Konishi and Kitagawa (1996), Burnham and Anderson (2002), Bozdogan (2000) and Lv and Liu (2014). All of these authors, however, focus on independent observations, and hence time series data are regrettably precluded. Although Wei (1992) allowed for dependence among the data and showed that $L_{1}$ is the constant associated with the $\log n$ term in an asymptotic expression for the accumulated prediction error (APE) of the least squares predictor, his approach, focusing exclusively on the APE and the one-step prediction, is applicable to neither the MSPE nor the multistep prediction.
2.2. Conditions (C1)-(C6). In order to facilitate exposition, we impose the following regularity conditions.
(C1) There exist $q_{1}>5$ and $0<C_{1}<\infty$ such that, for any $1 \leq n_{1}<n_{2} \leq n$ and any $1 \leq i, j \leq m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left|\left(n_{2}-n_{1}+1\right)^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=n_{1}}^{n_{2}} x_{t, i} x_{t, j}-\mathrm{E}\left(x_{t, i} x_{t, j}\right)\right|^{q_{1}} \leq C_{1} . \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

(C2) $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{t, h} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}\right)$ is independent of $t$, and for any $1 \leq i, j \leq m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(x_{1, i} x_{n, j} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{n, h}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right) \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

(C3) $\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{x}_{t}\right\|^{10}<\infty$ and $\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left|\varepsilon_{t, h}\right|^{6}<\infty$, where for vector $\mathbf{f}=\left(f_{1}, \ldots, f_{m}\right)^{\top},\|\mathbf{f}\|^{2}=\sum_{t=1}^{m} f_{t}^{2}$.
(C4) There exists $0<C_{2}<\infty$ such that, for $1 \leq n_{1}<n_{2} \leq n$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\left(n_{2}-n_{1}+1\right)^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=n_{1}}^{n_{2}} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|^{5}<C_{2} \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

(C5) For any $q>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\|^{q}=O(1) \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where for a square matrix $\mathbf{A},\|\mathbf{A}\|^{2}=\sup _{\|\mathbf{w}\|=1}\|\mathbf{A w}\|^{2}$.
(C6) There exists an increasing sequence of $\sigma$-fields $\mathcal{F}_{t} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ such that $\mathbf{x}_{t}$ is $\mathcal{F}_{t}$-measurable and

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-k}\right)-\mathbf{R}\right\|^{3}=o(1), \\
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-k}\right)\right\|^{3}=o(1), \tag{2.14}
\end{array}
$$

as $k \rightarrow \infty$.
Some comments are in order. Suppose that $\left\{x_{t, i}\right\}$ and $\left\{\varepsilon_{t, h}\right\}$ admit linear representations

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{t, i}=\sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{a}_{s, i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t-s}, \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varepsilon_{t, h}=\sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{b}_{s}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t+h-s} \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t}=\left(\epsilon_{t}, \epsilon_{t}^{(1)}, \ldots, \epsilon_{t}^{(m)}\right)^{\top}$ is a martingale difference sequence with respect to an increasing sequence of $\sigma$-fields, say $\mathcal{G}_{t}$, and $\mathbf{a}_{s, i}$ and $\mathbf{b}_{s}$ are $(m+1)$-dimensional nonrandom vectors. Define $\gamma_{i}(k)=\mathrm{E}\left(x_{t, i} x_{t+k, i}\right)$ and $\gamma(h, k)=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h} \varepsilon_{t+k, h}\right)$. Then (2.9) and (2.11) hold true, provided

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty}\left(\gamma_{1}^{2}(k)+\cdots+\gamma_{m}^{2}(k)\right)<\infty, \quad \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} \gamma^{2}(h, k)<\infty  \tag{2.17}\\
& \mathrm{E}\left(\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t} \boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t}^{\top} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t-1}\right)=\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \quad \text { and } \\
& \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{t}\right\|^{q^{*}} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t-1}\right)<C_{q^{*}} \quad \text { with probability 1, } \tag{2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ is a positive definite nonrandom matrix, $q^{*}>10$ and $C_{q^{*}}$ is a positive finite constant. To see this, note that by the first moment bound theorem of Findley and Wei (1993) and an argument similar to that used in Lemma 2 of Ing and Wei (2003), it can be shown that (2.15)-(2.18) lead to (2.11) and (2.9), with $q_{1}=q^{*} / 2$ and $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ depending on $q^{*}, C_{q^{*}}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$. It may be worth pointing out that (2.15)-(2.17) are fulfilled by not only short-memory autoregressive moving average (ARMA) processes but also some long-memory processes; see Section 3 for more details. While it is possible to justify (2.9) and (2.11) under more general time series models, we leave this work for future exploration.

Condition (C2) leads to an unexpected cancelation associated with the righthand side of (2.8) mentioned previously. The first requirement of (C2) holds when $\left(y_{t}, \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}\right)^{\top}$ is a fourth-order stationary process or a stationary Gaussian process, whereas the second one essentially says that the dependence between $\mathbf{x}_{i} \varepsilon_{i, h}$ and $\mathbf{x}_{j} \varepsilon_{j, h}$ vanishes sufficiently quickly as $|i-j|$ tends to infinity.

Condition (C6) requires that the conditional expectations of $\mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}$ and $\mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}$ given $\mathcal{F}_{t-k}$ can be well approximated by their unconditional counterparts as long as $k$ is large enough. Conditions (C5) and (C6) are used to show that the first and second terms on the right-hand side of (2.8) are asymptotically equivalent to

$$
-2 \mathrm{E}\left\{\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\} \quad \text { and } \quad \mathrm{E}\left\{N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right) \mathbf{R}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)\right\}
$$

respectively, which facilitate mathematical analysis. According to Theorem 2.1 of Chan and Ing (2011), (2.12) in (C5) is ensured by the following distributional assumption: there exist positive integer $D$ and positive numbers $\delta, \alpha$ and $M$ such that, for any $t>D$, any $0<s_{2}-s_{1} \leq \delta$ and any $\|\mathbf{v}\|=1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(s_{1}<\mathbf{v}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t} \leq s_{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-D}\right) \leq M\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)^{\alpha} \quad \text { almost surely } \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (2.19) is flexible enough to allow for a variety of time series applications. For example, Lemma S2.1 in Section S2 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019) shows that (2.19) holds when $\mathbf{x}_{t}$ is the regressor of the ARX model described in Section 3. Hence (C5) is fulfilled by this type of model. In the special case of (2.5), (2.19) can be superseded by a simpler condition,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(s_{1}<\epsilon_{t} \leq s_{2}\right) \leq M\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)^{\alpha} . \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is shown in Ing and Wei (2003) that (2.20) is satisfied when $\epsilon_{t}$ are i.i.d. with bounded density function. Finally, we mention that the moment restrictions imposed by (C1)-(C6) are by no means the weakest possible, but they allow us to avoid unnecessary technicalities in the derivations of the key conclusions of this paper.
3. Misspecification-resistant information criterion. Being the population MSPE of model (2.3), the first term on the right-hand side of (2.4) is sometimes referred to as the misspecification index (MI) in the sequel. On the other hand, the dominant constant, $L_{h}$, associated with the second term on the right-hand side of (2.4) is refereed to as variability index (VI) because it is contributed by the sampling variability of $\hat{y}_{n+h}=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{n}$. As revealed by (2.4), selecting the model with the smallest MSPE amounts to selecting the model with the smallest VI among those with the smallest MI.

More specifically, consider $K$ candidate models for predicting $y_{n+h}$, having observations up to $n$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{n+h}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{(l)}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(l)}, \quad l=1, \ldots, K, \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}\right\}$ is a weakly stationary processes with mean zero, $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}$ is the best linear predictor of $y_{t+h}$ based on $\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}=y_{t+h}-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, \mathbf{l}}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} . \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{y}_{n+h}(l)=\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{n}^{(l)} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the least squares predictor of $y_{n+h}$ corresponding to model $l$, where

$$
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}(h)=\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} y_{t+h} .
$$

Throughout this section, we assume $\mathbf{R}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{(l)^{\top}}\right)$ is nonsingular for $l=$ $1, \ldots, K$. Let $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{1+s}^{(l)^{\top}} \varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{1+s, h}^{(l)}\right)$, and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MI}_{h}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2} \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{h}(l)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1}(l) \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}(l)\right)+\sum_{s=0}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1}(l) \mathbf{C}_{h, s}(l)\right) \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

noting that (3.4) and (3.5), respectively, are the MI and the VI for model $l$. As mentioned, our goal is to find model $\hat{l}$ in a data-driven fashion such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathrm{P}\left(\hat{l} \in M_{2}\right)=1 \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{2}=\left\{k: k \in M_{1}, L_{h}(k)=\min _{l \in M_{1}} L_{h}(l)\right\} \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1}=\left\{k: 1 \leq k \leq K, \operatorname{MI}_{h}(k)=\min _{1 \leq l \leq K} \operatorname{MI}_{h}(l)\right\} \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

A model selection criterion is said to be asymptotically efficient if (3.6) is fulfilled. Section S5 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019) provides several interesting examples showing that to achieve (3.6), one may face the challenging problem of choosing the best predictive model from those having the same MI (goodness-of- fit) and the same number of parameters. These examples also reveal that the best predictive model may vary with the prediction lead time $h$, raising another subtle issue.

Inspired by (2.4), our strategy to achieve (3.6) is to first construct the method of moments estimators of $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)$ and $L_{h}(l)$,

$$
\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(y_{t+h}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}\right)^{2} \equiv N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2},
$$

and

$$
\widehat{L}_{h}(l)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}(l)\right)+2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}(l)\right)
$$

respectively, where $\widehat{\mathbf{R}}(l)=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}$ and

$$
\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}(l)=(N-s)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N-s} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}} \hat{\varepsilon}_{t, h}^{(l)} \hat{\varepsilon}_{t+s, h}^{(l)} .
$$

We then use $h$-step MRIC, $\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)$, to quantify the performance of model $l$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)=\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{C_{n}}{n} \widehat{L}_{h}(l) \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{C_{n}}{n^{1 / 2}} \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{C_{n}}{n} \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, we choose model $\hat{l}_{h}$, which satisfies

$$
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)=\min _{1 \leq l \leq K} \operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)
$$

The major difference between $\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)$ and the natural estimator $\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+$ $n^{-1} \widehat{L}_{h}(l)$ of $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}(l)\right)^{2}$ [cf. (2.4)] is that $\mathrm{MRIC}_{h}(l)$ puts an additional penalty factor $C_{n}$ on $\widehat{L}_{h}(l)$. This factor plays a crucial role in search of the best predictive model and is particularly relevant in situations where several competing models share the same MI. To see this, note first that under (3.17)-(3.21) (described below), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)=\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)+O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right) \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{L}_{h}(l)=L_{h}(l)+o_{p}(1) \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

yielding

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)=\operatorname{MI}_{h}(l)+O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)+\frac{C_{n}}{n} L_{h}(l)+o_{p}\left(\frac{C_{n}}{n}\right) \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

In view of (3.11), property (3.14) immediately implies

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{l}_{h} \in M_{1}\right)=1
$$

Moreover, it follows from (3.14) and (3.10) that for $J_{l_{1}}, J_{l_{2}} \in M_{1}$ with $L_{h}\left(l_{1}\right) \neq$ $L_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)$,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\operatorname{sign}\left(\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}\left(l_{1}\right)-\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)\right)\right.  \tag{3.15}\\
\left.=\operatorname{sign}\left(L_{h}\left(l_{1}\right)-L_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)\right)\right)=1,
\end{gather*}
$$

and hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{l}_{h} \in M_{2}\right)=1 \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above discussion is summarized in the next theorem.
THEOREM 3.1. Suppose for each $1 \leq l \leq K$ and $0 \leq s \leq h-1$,

$$
\begin{align*}
n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2} & =\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}+O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right),  \tag{3.17}\\
n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)} & =\mathbf{C}_{h, s}(l)+o_{p}(1) \tag{3.18}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)} & =O_{p}(1)  \tag{3.19}\\
n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}} & =\mathbf{R}(l)+o_{p}(1) \tag{3.20}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{4}+\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}\right\|^{4}<\infty \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, (3.12) and (3.13) hold. As a result, (3.16) follows.
REMARK 1. Note that (3.16) [or $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)$ and $\left.L_{h}(l)\right]$ is relevant only when the asymptotic expression (2.4) holds for each candidate model, which in turn is ensured by (C1)-(C6). If we assume that (C1)-(C6) hold for each $1 \leq l \leq K$, then conditions (3.19)-(3.21) can be dropped from Theorem 3.1 because they are weaker than (C4), (C1) and (C3), respectively. Another two conditions of Theorem 3.1, (3.17) and (3.18), are easily fulfilled when $\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}$ and $\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}$ are linear processes obeying (2.15) and (2.16); see Theorem 3.2 and Section S2 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019). Moreover, if the elements in $M_{1}$ are nested, the restriction on $C_{n}$ in (3.10) can be weakened to

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n} \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence a weaker penalty on $\widehat{L}_{h}(l)$ is allowed. To see this, assume $J_{l_{1}}, J_{l_{2}} \in M_{1}$ with $J_{l_{1}} \subset J_{l_{2}}$ and $L_{h}\left(l_{1}\right) \neq L_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)$. Then it can be shown that $\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(l_{1}\right)-\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(l_{2}\right)=$ $O_{p}(1 / n)$ and $\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}\left(l_{1}\right)-\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)=\left(C_{n} / n\right)\left(L_{h}\left(l_{1}\right)-L_{h}\left(l_{2}\right)\right)+o_{p}\left(C_{n} / n\right)+$ $O_{p}(1 / n)$. This and (3.22) yield (3.15), and hence the desired conclusion.

REMARK 2. It is shown in Sin and White (1996) and Inoue and Kilian (2006) that BIC has the so-called "strong parsimony property" in the sense that it will asymptotically choose the most parsimonious model among those candidates having the smallest MI. However, when two misspecified models have the same MI, the one with fewer parameters does not necessarily lead to a smaller VI; see Findley (1991) for a related discussion. Moreover, two nonnested misspecified models with the same MI may have different VIs even if they share the same number of parameters; see Section S5 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019). In this latter case, both BIC and AIC tend to randomly choose between the two alternatives instead of selecting the one having the smaller VI. For more details on the comparison of the finite-sample performance of MRIC with AIC, BIC, GAIC, GBIC and GAIC $p_{p}$; see Sections S5 and S6 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019).

REMARK 3. Theorem 3.1 is readily extended to deal with multiple lead times. Assume that for each $1 \leq h \leq H$, there are $K_{h}$ candidate models for forecasting $y_{n+h}$. Let $\hat{y}_{n+h}(1), \ldots, \hat{y}_{n+h}\left(K_{h}\right)$ denote the least squares predictors of $y_{n+h}$
derived from these $K_{h}$ models. To predict $\mathbf{y}_{n+H}=\left(y_{n+1}, \ldots, y_{n+H}\right)^{\top}$, we use $\left(\hat{y}_{n+1}\left(l_{1}\right), \ldots, \hat{y}_{n+H}\left(l_{H}\right)\right)^{\top}$, where $\left(l_{1}, \ldots, l_{H}\right)^{\top} \in \mathcal{A}_{H}=A_{1} \times \cdots \times A_{H}$ with $A_{h}=\left\{1, \ldots, K_{h}\right\}$. Denote $\left(\hat{y}_{n+1}\left(l_{1}\right), \ldots, \hat{y}_{n+H}\left(l_{H}\right)\right)^{\top}$ by $\hat{\mathbf{y}}_{n+H}(\mathbf{l})$, where $\mathbf{l}=$ $\left(l_{1}, \ldots, l_{H}\right)^{\top}$. The performance of $\hat{\mathbf{y}}_{n+H}(\mathbf{l})$ is evaluated by $\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{y}_{n+H}-\hat{\mathbf{y}}_{n+H}(\mathbf{l})\right\|^{2}$. Under the assumptions of Theorem 2.1, it holds that for each $1 \leq h \leq H$ and $1 \leq l \leq K_{h}, \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} n\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}(l)\right)^{2}-\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)\right\}=L_{h}(l)$, and hence

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} n\left\{\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{y}_{n+H}-\hat{\mathbf{y}}_{n+H}(\mathbf{l})\right\|^{2}-\mathcal{M} I_{H}(\mathbf{l})\right\}=\mathcal{L}_{H}(\mathbf{l}),
$$

where $\mathcal{M I}_{H}(\mathbf{l})=\sum_{h=1}^{H} \operatorname{MI}_{h}\left(l_{h}\right)$ and $\mathcal{L}_{H}(\mathbf{l})=\sum_{h=1}^{H} L_{h}\left(l_{h}\right)$. Define

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{M}_{1}=\left\{\mathbf{k}: \mathbf{k} \in \mathcal{A}_{H}, \mathcal{M} I_{H}(\mathbf{k})=\min _{\mathbf{l} \in \mathcal{A}_{H}} \mathcal{M} I_{H}(\mathbf{l})\right\}, \\
& \mathcal{M}_{2}=\left\{\mathbf{k}: \mathbf{k} \in \mathcal{M}_{1}, \mathcal{L}_{H}(\mathbf{k})=\min _{\mathbf{l} \in \mathcal{M}_{1}} \mathcal{L}_{H}(\mathbf{l})\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By an argument similar to that used to prove Theorem 3.1, we obtain the extension

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{\mathbf{l}}_{H} \in \mathcal{M}_{2}\right)=1
$$

where $\hat{\mathbf{l}}_{H}=\left(\hat{l}_{1}, \ldots, \hat{l}_{H}\right)^{\top}$ with $\hat{l}_{h}$ satisfying $\operatorname{MRIC}\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)=\min _{1 \leq l \leq K_{h}} \operatorname{MRIC}_{h}(l)$. In fact, based on a set of conditions similar to (C1)-(C6), extensions of Theorems 2.1 and 3.1 to a class of nonlinear models have also been obtained; see Section S4 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019).

To further illustrate Theorems 2.1 and 3.1, we consider the following autoregressive exogenous (ARX) model:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\phi}(B) y_{t+1}=\sum_{v=1}^{p} \sum_{j=0}^{r_{v}} \eta_{j}^{(v)} s_{t-j}^{(v)}+\epsilon_{t+1} \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B$ denotes the back shift operator such that $B y_{t}=y_{t-1}, p$ and $r_{v}$ are positive integers, $\epsilon_{t}$ are independent random disturbances with $\mathrm{E}\left(\epsilon_{t}\right)=0$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\epsilon_{t}^{2}\right)=\sigma^{2}>0, \boldsymbol{\phi}(z)=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \phi_{j} z^{j}$ with $\phi_{0}=1$ and $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \phi_{j}^{2}<\infty, \eta_{j}^{(v)}$ are real numbers and $s_{t}^{(v)}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \psi_{j}^{(v)} \delta_{t-j}^{(v)}$ with $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\left(\psi_{j}^{(v)}\right)^{2}<\infty$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}(p)=$ $\left(\delta_{t}^{(1)}, \ldots, \delta_{t}^{(p)}\right)^{\top}$ being independent random vectors satisfying $\mathrm{E}\left(\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}(p)\right)=\mathbf{0}$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}(p) \boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}^{\top}(p)\right)=\Sigma_{p}$, a $p$-dimensional positive definite matrix independent of $t$. Moreover, it is assumed that $\left\{\epsilon_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}(p)\right\}$ are independent, for any $|z|<1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\phi}^{-1}(z)=\boldsymbol{\theta}(z)=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \theta_{j} z^{j} \quad \text { with } \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \theta_{j}^{2}<\infty \tag{3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}\left(c_{j}^{(v)}\right)^{2}<\infty \quad \text { with } c_{j}^{(v)}=\sum_{k=0}^{j} \psi_{k}^{(v)} \theta_{j-k}, 1 \leq v \leq p \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

We are interested in forecasting $y_{n+h}, h \geq 1$, using one of model $1, \ldots$, model $K$, where the explanatory vector in model $l$ at time $t$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}=\left(y_{t-j}, j \in J_{0}^{(l)}, s_{t-j}^{(v)}, j \in J_{v}^{(l)}, 1 \leq v \leq p\right)^{\top} \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $J_{v}^{(l)}, 0 \leq v \leq p$, being given finite sets of nonnegative integers. We illustrate that (3.26) can be misspecified via a special case of (3.23),

$$
y_{t+1}=a y_{t}+s_{t}^{(1)}+\epsilon_{t+1}
$$

where $0<|a|<1$ and $s_{t}^{(1)}$ is a stationary MA(1) model satisfying $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} b^{j} s_{t-j}^{(1)}=$ $\delta_{t}^{(1)}$ with $0<|b|<1$. Straightforward calculations show that the correctly specified ARX model for two-step prediction is

$$
y_{t+2}=a^{2} y_{t}+(a-b) s_{t}^{(1)}-\sum_{j=2}^{\infty} b^{j} s_{t+1-j}^{(1)}+v_{t+2}
$$

where $v_{t+2}=\epsilon_{t+2}+a \epsilon_{t+1}+\delta_{t+1}^{(1)}$. Since the model involves the infinite past $s_{t}^{(1)}, s_{t-1}^{(1)}, \ldots$, any candidate model containing only a finite number of the lagged variables of $s_{t}^{(1)}$ is misspecified.

We aim at finding a data-driven method to choose among the candidate models such that (3.6) is satisfied. Let $\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}, \hat{y}_{n+h}(l), \mathrm{MI}_{h}(l), L_{h}(l), M_{2}$ and $M_{1}$ be defined as in (3.2)-(3.5), (3.7) and (3.8). The next theorem shows that MRIC, introduced in (3.9)-(3.11), attains the desired goal under suitable assumptions on the moments and distributions of $\mathbf{v}_{t}=\left(\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}^{\top}(p), \epsilon_{t}\right)^{\top}$ as well as the decay rates of $\psi_{j}^{(v)}, \theta_{j}$ and $c_{j}^{(v)}$.

THEOREM 3.2. Assume that (3.23)-(3.25) hold. Suppose that the fourth moments of $\mathbf{v}_{t}$ are independent of $t$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{v}_{t}\right\|^{\theta}<\infty, \quad \text { for some } \theta>10 \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and there exist $K_{1}>0, \delta_{1}>0$ and $v>0$ such that, for all $-\infty<t<\infty$ and all $0<w-u \leq \delta_{1}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\|\mathbf{a}\|=1} \mathrm{P}\left(u<\mathbf{a}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{t} \leq w\right) \leq K_{1}(w-u)^{\nu} \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume also that there exist $c_{1}>0$ and $s>3 / 4$ for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\theta_{j}\right| \leq c_{1}(j+1)^{-s} \quad \text { and } \quad\left|\psi_{j}^{(v)}\right|+\left|c_{j}^{(v)}\right| \leq c_{1}(j+1)^{-s}, \quad 1 \leq v \leq p \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (C1)-(C6) hold for $\mathbf{x}_{t}=\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}, \varepsilon_{t, h}=\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}$, and $\mathcal{F}_{t}=\sigma\left(\mathbf{v}_{t}, \mathbf{v}_{t-1}, \ldots\right)$, yielding

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} n\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{y}_{n+h}(l)\right)^{2}-\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)\right\}=L_{h}(l)
$$

Moreover, (3.17)-(3.21) follow, and hence (3.16) holds true.

REMARK 4. Assumption (3.29) allows the component of $\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}$ to not only be a short-memory ARMA process, but also belong to some important classes of long-memory processes, for example, the fractionally integrated $\mathrm{I}(d)$ process with $-1 / 2<d<1 / 4$. As is clear from the proof of Theorem 3.2, (3.29) is crucial for verifying (3.18) and condition (C2), and can hardly be weakened.

REMARK 5. Assumption (3.28) is used to prove (2.19), which in turn leads to condition (C5) according to Chan and Ing (2011). More details can be found in Section S2 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019). Note that (C5) has played an increasingly important role in deriving model selection criteria or MSPE formulas in a rigorous manner; see, for example, Findley and Wei (2002), Ing and Wei (2003, 2005), Schorfheide (2005), Chan and Ing (2011) and Greenaway-McGrevy $(2013,2015)$. However, most of these papers verify (C5) only in situations where regressors contain no exogenous variables.

## 4. An extension to high-dimensional misspecified time series models.

4.1. Consistency of $O G A+H D I C_{h}+$ Trim. In this section, we consider the high-dimensional time series model,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+h}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}+\varepsilon_{t, h}=\sum_{j=1}^{p} \beta_{j, h} x_{t, j}+\varepsilon_{t, h}, \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{y_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t}\right\}$ are weakly stationary processes with mean zero, $p$ is allowed to be larger than $n, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}$ is the unique minimizer of $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}-\mathbf{c}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}\right)^{2}$ over $\mathbf{c} \in R^{p}$, and the dependence of $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ on $p$ is suppressed in the notation. Like Section 2, this section also assumes that $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ can be serially correlated and correlated with $\mathbf{x}_{k}$ for $k \neq t$. In other words, model misspecification is allowed. It is worth mentioning that although high-dimensional regressions with independent observations have been extensively studied over the past decade, relatively less efforts have been devoted to the investigation of high-dimensional time series models. Aiming at bridging this gap, Basu and Michailidis (2015) and Wu and Wu (2016) have recently studied the asymptotic behavior of Lasso estimates under the following high-dimensional model,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{t}=\boldsymbol{\beta}^{*^{\top}} \mathbf{x}^{t}+\varepsilon^{t} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{\varepsilon^{t}\right\}$ is a stationary time series, and $\left\{\mathbf{x}^{t}\right\}$ is a $p$-dimensional stationary time series independent of $\left\{\varepsilon^{t}\right\}$ [Basu and Michailidis (2015)] or a sequence of $p$ dimensional nonrandom vectors [Wu and $\mathrm{Wu}(2016)]$. However, when $\left\{\mathbf{x}^{t}\right\}$ is random, the assumption of independence between $\left\{\mathbf{x}^{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\varepsilon^{t}\right\}$ not only precludes autoregressive time series, but is also often violated under model misspecification. On the other hand, (4.1) is flexible enough to accommodate these cases.

Define

$$
N_{h}=\left\{j: 1 \leq j \leq p, \beta_{j, h} \neq 0\right\}
$$

which is the index set corresponding to all relevant variables. In the sequel, we call the index set of a subset model of (4.1) a "model" whenever no confusion is possible. Obviously, $N_{h}$ is the smallest model among those having the lowest MI, and also the smallest true model when (4.1) is correctly specified. The goal of this subsection is to consistently estimate $N_{h}$.

Since $p$ can be much larger than $n$, we introduce a recursive procedure, which we call an orthogonal greedy algorithm (OGA), to select variables one at a time. The procedure goes as follows. First, let $\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(0)}=\mathbf{y}_{h}=\left(y_{1+h}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)^{\top}$ and $\hat{J}_{0}=\varnothing$. For $1 \leq m \leq p, \hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(m)}, \hat{J}_{m}$, and $\hat{j}_{m} \in\{1, \ldots, p\}$ are given recursively by

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{j}_{m} & =\arg \max _{1 \leq j \leq p, j \notin \hat{J}_{m-1}}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{\hat{J}_{m-1}, j}\right|, \\
\hat{J}_{m} & =\hat{J}_{m-1} \cup\left\{\hat{j}_{m}\right\},  \tag{4.3}\\
\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(m)} & =\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}\right) \mathbf{y}_{h},
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathbf{H}_{J}, J \subset\{1, \ldots, p\}$, is the orthogonal projection matrix onto the linear span of $\left\{\mathbf{X}_{i}=\left(x_{1, i}, \ldots, x_{N, i}\right)^{\top}, i \in J\right\}$, and $\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}=\mathbf{X}_{i}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{J}\right) \mathbf{y}_{h} /\left(N^{1 / 2}\left\|\mathbf{X}_{i}\right\|\right)$. When the number of the OGA iterations achieves a prescribed upper bound $1 \leq K_{n} \leq p$, the algorithm outputs model $\hat{J}_{K_{n}}$. As shown in Theorem 4.1 below, $\hat{J}_{K_{n}}$ enjoys the so-called "sure screening property" (meaning that the event $\left\{N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right\}$ has a probability tending to 1 as $n \rightarrow \infty$ ), provided $K_{n}$ is sufficiently large and conditions (F1)-(F6) below hold true.
(F1) For some $q_{1} \geq 2, \max _{1 \leq i, j \leq p} \mathrm{E}\left|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(z_{t, i} z_{t, j}-\rho_{i, j}\right)\right|^{2 q_{1}}=O(1)$, where $z_{t, i}=x_{t, i} / \sigma_{i}, \sigma_{i}^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left(x_{t, i}^{2}\right)>0$, and $\rho_{i, j}=\mathrm{E}\left(z_{t, i} z_{t, j}\right)$.
(F2) For some $q_{2} \geq 2, \max _{1 \leq i \leq p} \mathrm{E}\left|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n} z_{t, i} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|^{q_{2}}=O$ (1).
(F3) $p$ is a nondecreasing function of $n$ and obeys $p^{2 / q} / n=o(1)$, where $q \geq 2$ is a known lower bound for $\min \left\{q_{1}, q_{2}\right\}$.
(F4) There exists some $0<G_{1}<\infty$ such that $\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*}\right| \equiv \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left|\sigma_{j} \beta_{j, h}\right|<$ $G_{1}$.
(F5) For any $1 \leq m \leq p$, there are some $c_{1}, c_{2}>0,0 \leq \theta_{1}<1$, and $\theta_{2} \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \min _{\sharp(J) \leq m} \lambda_{\min }(\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)) \geq c_{1} m^{-\theta_{1}}, \\
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq m, 1 \leq i \leq p, i \notin J}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)^{-1} \mathbf{g}_{i}(J)\right\|_{1} \leq c_{2} m^{\theta_{2}}, \tag{4.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\lambda_{\min }(\boldsymbol{A})$ denotes the minimum eigenvalue of $\boldsymbol{A}, \boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}^{\top}(J)\right)$ with $\mathbf{z}_{t}(J)=\left(z_{t, j}, j \in J\right)^{\top}, \mathbf{g}_{i}(J)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{z}_{t}(J) z_{t, i}\right)$, and $\|\cdot\|_{1}$ denotes the $l_{1}$ norm of a vector.
(F6) $N_{h} \neq \varnothing$ and for some small $\underline{\delta}>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min _{j \in N_{h}}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*}\right| \geq \underline{\delta} \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

REMARK 6. Some comments are in order. First, (F1) and (F2) are parallel to (C1) and (C4) in Section 2. As mentioned previously, these two assumptions are fulfilled when $z_{t, i}$ and $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ are linear processes with square summable autocovariance functions, and hence allow $y_{t}$ and $x_{t, i}$ to be $\mathrm{I}(d)$ processes with $-1 / 2<$ $d<1 / 4$. Note that stationary $\mathrm{I}(d)$ processes with $d \neq 0$ is precluded by Basu and Michailidis (2015). In addition, (F1) and (F2) are substantially weaker than sub-Gaussian and sub-exponential assumptions, which are commonly adopted in the high-dimensional statistics literature, but may seem restrictive in practice. On the other hand, since there is a tradeoff between the moment conditions and the conditions on $p$, the frequently used condition, $p=O(\exp (\xi n)), 0<\xi \leq 1$, under sub-Gaussianity/sub-exponentiality is now strengthened to (F3). Condition (F5) imposes mild restrictions on the correlations among regressors. For example, it allows $\mathbf{x}_{t}$ to consist of a stationary $\mathrm{I}(d)$ variable and its lagged values. Conditions (F4) and (F6) together imply that $\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)$ is bounded above by a finite constant. While $\underline{\delta}>0$ in (4.5) can be weakened to $\underline{\delta} \rightarrow 0$ at a sufficiently slow rate, such a generalization is not pursued here. Finally, we mention that our results do not rely on assumptions like $\lambda_{\text {max }}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma})<\infty$, where $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{z}_{t} \mathbf{z}_{t}^{\top}\right)$ with $\mathbf{z}_{t}=\left(z_{t, 1}, \ldots, z_{t, p}\right)^{\top}$ and $\lambda_{\text {max }}(A)$ denotes the maximum eigenvalue of $A$, but this type of assumption is needed by Basu and Michailidis (2015) to derive asymptotic properties of the Lasso estimates under (4.2).

Theorem 4.1. Assume that (F1)-(F6) hold. Then, for $K_{n}=\min \left\{p, \bar{m}_{n}\right\}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(N_{h} \subset \hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right)=1 \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{\bar{m}_{n}\right\}$ is any nondecreasing sequence of positive integers tending to $\infty$ as $n$ does.

REMARK 7. Under correctly specified high-dimensional regression models with independent observations, the sure screening property has been established for the Lasso by Bickel, Ritov and Tsybakov (2009), for the OGA by Ing and Lai (2011), for the Sure Independence Screening (SIS) by Fan and Lv (2008), and a forward regression procedure by Wang (2009). Wu and Wu (2016) focused instead on high-dimensional time series models and developed the sure screening property of the Clime estimate under (4.2) with $\left\{\mathbf{x}^{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\varepsilon^{t}\right\}$ being stationary, but not necessarily independent. However, they required that both $\left\{\mathbf{x}^{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\varepsilon^{t}\right\}$ are short-memory time series.

While $\hat{J}_{K_{n}}$ possesses the sure screening property, it may contain many irrelevant indices $j$ whose corresponding coefficients $\beta_{j, h}$ are zero. In the following, we
shall choose a subset from $\hat{J}_{K_{n}}$ that is equivalent to $N_{h}$ asymptotically. To this end, we start by introducing a high-dimensional information criterion (HDIC), which assigns a real number to a model $J$ as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}(J)=\left(1+\frac{\sharp(J) p^{2 / q} \omega_{n}}{n}\right) \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(J), \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(J)=N^{-1} \mathbf{y}_{h}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{J}\right) \mathbf{y}_{h}$ and $\omega_{n} \rightarrow \infty$ at a rate to be specified later. We then choose a subset $\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}$ of $\hat{J}_{K_{n}}$ that minimizes $\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}(J)$ along the OGA path. More precisely, $\hat{k}_{n}$ is defined to be the smallest integer $k$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}\left(\hat{J}_{k}\right)=\min _{1 \leq m \leq K_{n}} \operatorname{HDIC}_{h}\left(\hat{J}_{m}\right) \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}$ may still contain redundant indices, we further trim $\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}$ by making use of $\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}$ to come up with

$$
\hat{N}_{h}= \begin{cases}\left\{\hat{j}_{k}: 1 \leq k \leq \hat{k}_{n}, \operatorname{HDIC}_{h}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right)<\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}-\left\{\hat{j}_{k}\right\}\right)\right\}, & \hat{k}_{n}>1  \tag{4.9}\\ \left\{\hat{j}_{1}\right\}, & \hat{k}_{n}=1\end{cases}
$$

The above model selection procedure is referred to as "OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim". The main result of this section is reported in the next theorem.

Theorem 4.2. Assume (F1)-(F6), and

$$
\begin{equation*}
n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)+o_{p}(1) \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose that $K_{n}$ and $\omega_{n}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}=\min \left\{p, \bar{m}_{n}\right\}, \quad \omega_{n} \rightarrow \infty, \quad \omega_{n}=O\left(n^{1 / 2} / p^{1 / q}\right) \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{\bar{m}_{n}\right\}$ is a sequence of positive integers obeying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{m}_{n} \rightarrow \infty, \bar{m}_{n}^{\theta_{1}+2 \theta_{2}}=o\left(\omega_{n}\right), \quad \bar{m}_{n}^{1+\max \left\{\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right\}}=o\left(n^{1 / 2} / p^{1 / q}\right) \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{N}_{h}=N_{h}\right)=1 \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

To the best of our knowledge, Theorem 4.2 is the first result showing that selection consistency is still achievable under high-dimensional misspecified time series models. It is further shown in Sections S5 and S6 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019) that $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim has satisfactory finite-sample performance.
4.2. Asymptotically efficient model selection across several high-dimensional time series models. In real world situations, prediction is often conducted by several different forecasters. Some forecasters may live in a variable-rich environment, where hundreds and thousands of variables are readily accessible, whereas others may rely more on rich domain-specific knowledge, and hence only require a relatively small set of candidate variables. Specifically, assume that there are $K$ (high-dimensional) models,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+h}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}+\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}=\sum_{j=1}^{p_{l}} \beta_{j, h}^{(l)} x_{t, j}^{(l)}+\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}, \quad l=1, \ldots, K, \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

proposed by $K$ different forecasters, where $\left\{x_{t, j}^{(l)}, 1 \leq j \leq p_{l}\right\}$ are the candidate variables employed by the $l$ th forecaster at time $t$, with $p_{l}$, the number of candidate variables, varying from one model to another. Define

$$
N_{h}^{(l)}=\left\{j: 1 \leq j \leq p_{l}, \beta_{j, h}^{(l)} \neq 0\right\}
$$

In addition to identifying $N_{h}^{(l)}, 1 \leq l \leq K$, the goal of this section is to find the best pair among $\left(l, N_{h}^{(l)}\right), l=1, \ldots, K$, in terms of their prediction capabilities.

Let $J \subset\left\{1, \ldots, p_{l}\right\} \equiv \mathcal{P}_{l}$ be a model in the $l$ th candidate family, that is, the family of all possible subsets of the $l$ th model in (4.14). In view of (3.4) and (3.5), the MI and VI of $J$ are given by $\mathrm{MI}_{h, l}(J)=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(l)}(J)\right)^{2}$ and

$$
L_{h, l}(J)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{(l)^{-1}}(J) \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}^{(l)}(J)\right)+2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \mathbf{R}^{(l)^{-1}}(J) \mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{(l)}(J)\right),
$$

respectively, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}(J) & =y_{t+h}-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}^{\top}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \\
\mathbf{R}^{(l)}(J) & =\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}(J)\right) \\
\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{(l)}(J) & =\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}(J) \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)}(J)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J)=\left(x_{t, j}^{(l)}, j \in J\right)^{\top}$ and $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}(J)=\arg \min _{\mathbf{c} \in R^{\sharp(J)}} \mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}-\mathbf{c}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J)\right)^{2}$. It is clear that $\mathrm{MI}_{h, l}\left(\mathcal{P}_{l}\right)=\mathrm{MI}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)$. In addition, (3.8) and (3.7) motivate us to define

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{A, h}=\left\{l: 1 \leq l \leq K, \operatorname{MI}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)=\min _{1 \leq j \leq K} \operatorname{MI}_{h, j}\left(N_{h}^{(j)}\right)\right\}, \\
& M_{B, h}=\left\{l: L_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)=\min _{j \in M_{A, h}} L_{h, j}\left(N_{h}^{(j)}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
M_{C, h}=\left\{\left(l, N_{h}^{(l)}\right): l \in M_{B, h}\right\}
$$

noting that $M_{C, h}$ is the collection of the (asymptotically) best forecaster-model pairs for $h$-step prediction. We aim at proposing a data-driven $(\hat{l}, \hat{J})$, where $1 \leq$ $\hat{l} \leq K$ and $\hat{J} \subseteq\left\{1, \ldots, p_{\hat{l}}\right\}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left((\hat{l}, \hat{J}) \in M_{C, h}\right)=1 \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\left(\sigma_{i}^{(l)}\right)^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left(x_{t, i}^{(l)}\right)^{2}, z_{t, i}^{(l)}=x_{t, i}^{(l)} / \sigma_{i}^{(l)}, \beta_{j, h}^{(l)^{*}}=\beta_{j, h}^{(l)} \sigma_{j}^{(l)}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{(l)^{*}}=\left(\beta_{j, h}^{(l)^{*}}, 1 \leq\right.$ $\left.j \leq p_{l}\right)^{\top}, \rho_{i, j}^{(l)}=\mathrm{E}\left(z_{t, i}^{(l)} z_{t, j}^{(l)}\right), \mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)}=\left(z_{t, i}^{(l)}, 1 \leq i \leq p_{l}\right)^{\top}, \mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)}(J)=\left(z_{t, i}^{(l)}, i \in J \subseteq\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{P}_{l}\right)^{\top}$ and $\mathbf{g}_{i}^{(l)}(J)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)}(J) z_{t, i}^{(l)}\right)$. We assume that for each $1 \leq l \leq K$, there exist $0 \leq \theta_{1, l}<1, \theta_{2, l} \geq 0$, and positive numbers $q_{1, l}, q_{2, l}, G_{1, l}, c_{1, l}, c_{2, l}$ and $\underline{\delta}_{l}$ such that $(\mathrm{F} 1(l))-(\mathrm{F} 6(l))$ hold, where $(\mathrm{F} 1(l))-(\mathrm{F} 6(l))$ are $(\mathrm{F} 1)-(\mathrm{F} 6)$ with $\mathbf{z}_{t}, \rho_{i, j}, \varepsilon_{t, h}, p$, $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{*}, N_{h}, \boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)$ and $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)^{-1} \mathbf{g}_{i}(J)$ therein replaced by $\mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)}, \rho_{i, j}^{(l)}, \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}, p_{l}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{(l)^{*}}, N_{h}^{(l)}$, $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_{l}(J)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}(J)\right)$ and $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_{l}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{g}_{i}^{(l)}(J)$, and with $\theta_{1} \theta_{2}, q_{1}, q_{2}, q, G_{1}, c_{1}$, $c_{2}$ and $\underline{\delta}$ replaced by $\theta_{1, l} \theta_{2, l}, q_{1, l}, q_{2, l}, q_{l}=\min \left\{q_{1, l}, q_{2, l}\right\}, G_{1, l}, c_{1, l}, c_{2, l}$ and $\underline{\delta}_{l}$. Moreover, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}(J)=\left(1+\frac{\sharp(J) p_{l}^{2 / q_{l}} \omega_{n}^{(l)}}{n}\right) \hat{\sigma}_{h, l}^{2}(J), \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\sigma}_{h, l}^{2}(J)=N^{-1} \mathbf{y}_{h}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{J}^{(l)}\right) \mathbf{y}_{h}$, with $\mathbf{H}_{J}^{(l)}$ denoting the orthogonal projection matrix onto the linear span of the set of vectors $\left\{\mathbf{X}_{j}^{(l)}=\left(x_{1, j}^{(l)}, \ldots, x_{n, j}^{(l)}\right)^{\top}, j \in\right.$ $J\}$ and $\omega_{n}^{(l)} \rightarrow \infty$ at a suitable rate.

Our strategy is to use OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim to determine a model, $\hat{N}_{h}^{(l)}$, from the $l$ th candidate family, and then employ MRIC to choose among $\hat{N}_{h}^{(l)}, l=$ $1, \ldots, K$. This procedure starts with applying the OGA to each model in (4.14), yielding

$$
\hat{J}_{K_{n}^{(l)}}^{(l)}=\left\{\hat{j}_{1}^{(l)}, \ldots, \hat{j}_{K_{n}^{(l)}}^{(l)}\right\}, \quad l=1, \ldots, K
$$

where $K_{n}^{(l)}$ is a prescribed upper bound for the number of iterations when the OGA is applied to the $l$ th model in (4.14). Let $\hat{k}_{n}^{(l)}$ be the smallest integer $k$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{J}_{k}^{(l)}\right)=\min _{1 \leq m \leq K_{n}^{(l)}} \operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{J}_{m}^{(l)}\right) \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{J}_{m}^{(l)}=\left\{\hat{j}_{1}^{(l)}, \ldots, \hat{j}_{m}^{(l)}\right\}$. Then $\hat{N}_{h}^{(l)}$ is given by

$$
\hat{N}_{h}^{(l)}= \begin{cases}\left\{\hat{j}_{k}^{(l)}: 1 \leq k \leq \hat{k}_{n}^{(l)},\right.  \tag{4.18}\\ \left.\operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}^{(l)}}\right)<\operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}^{(l)}}-\left\{\hat{j}_{k}^{(l)}\right\}\right)\right\}, & \hat{k}_{n}^{(l)}>1 \\ \left\{\hat{j}_{1}^{(l)}\right\}, & \hat{k}_{n}^{(l)}=1\end{cases}
$$

The last step of this procedure is to choose $\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}$ from $\left\{\hat{N}_{h}^{(j)}, 1 \leq j \leq K\right\}$, where $\hat{l}_{h}$ satisfies

$$
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right)=\min _{1 \leq j \leq K} \operatorname{MRIC}_{h, j}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{(j)}\right)
$$

Here for $J \subset \mathcal{P}_{l}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}(J)=\hat{\sigma}_{h, l}^{2}(J)+\frac{C_{n}}{n} \widehat{L}_{h, l}(J), \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $C_{n}$ obeys (3.10) and (3.11), and

$$
\widehat{L}_{h, l}(J)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{(l)^{-1}}(J) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}^{(l)}(J)\right)+2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{(l)^{-1}}(J) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}^{(l)}(J)\right),
$$

with

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{(l)} & =N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}(J), \\
\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}^{(l)}(J) & =(N-s)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N-s} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}(J) \hat{\varepsilon}_{t, h}^{(l)}(J) \hat{\varepsilon}_{t+s, h}^{(l)}(J), \\
\hat{\varepsilon}_{t, h}^{(l)}(J) & =y_{t+h}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{h, l}^{\top}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J), \\
\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{h, l}(J) & =\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}}(J)\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}(J) y_{t+h} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The above model selection procedure is referred to as "OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim + MRIC". The next theorem shows that $\left(\hat{l}_{h}, \hat{N}_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right)$ satisfies (4.15).

THEOREM 4.3. Assume that for $l=1, \ldots, K,(\mathrm{~F} 1(l))-(\mathrm{F} 6(l)),(3.17)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right) \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)}=C_{h, s}^{(l)}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)+o_{p}(1) \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{4}+\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)\right\|^{4}<\infty \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

hold true. Moreover, suppose for $l=1, \ldots, K$,
(4.22) $\quad K_{n}^{(l)}=\min \left\{p_{l}, \bar{m}_{n}^{(l)}\right\}, \quad \omega_{n}^{(l)} \rightarrow \infty, \quad \omega_{n}^{(l)}=O\left(n^{1 / 2} / p_{l}^{1 / q_{l}}\right)$, where $\bar{m}_{n}^{(l)}$ obeys

$$
\begin{align*}
\bar{m}_{n}^{(l)} \rightarrow \infty, \quad\left(\bar{m}_{n}^{(l)}\right)^{\theta_{1, l}+2 \theta_{2, l}} & =o\left(\omega_{n}^{(l)}\right), \\
\left(\bar{m}_{n}^{(l)}\right)^{1+\max \left\{\theta_{1, l}, \theta_{2, l}\right\}} & =o\left(n^{1 / 2} / p_{l}^{1 / q_{l}}\right) . \tag{4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

## Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\left(\hat{l}_{h}, \hat{N}_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right) \in M_{C, h}\right)=1 \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

REMARK 8. Because $N_{h}^{(l)}, l=1, \ldots, K$, are not necessarily nested, the condition on $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}$ in Theorem 4.3 is the same as the one in Theorem 3.1, but is more stringent than conditions like (4.10). We also note that (4.20) and (4.21) are analogous to (3.18) and (3.21) of Theorem 3.1, respectively.

When compared to existing high-dimensional model selection methods, the most appealing feature of OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim + MRIC is that it can select the (asymptotically) best forecaster-model combination in situations where predictions are made by several forecasters, using different (possibly misspecified) highdimensional time series models. The advantage of OGA+HDIC $h_{h, l}+$ Trim+MRIC is also demonstrated via simulations in Section S5 of Hsu, Ing and Tong (2019).
5. Conclusions. This paper has addressed a serious lacuna that has attracted little attention in the vast literature on model selection. We argue that in many realistic applications, we are faced with the problem of selecting a model from a finite and fixed collection of models, without knowing whether the true DGP is included in it or not, and without recourse to the mathematical device of allowing the true DGP to be well approximated by an increasing sequence of candidate models. If we accept the partially tautological proposition that "all models are wrong, but some are useful", then we are often faced with precisely the above fundamental issue.

The MRIC gives an explicit expression, namely equation (3.9), which addresses not only the one-step ahead prediction but also the multistep case. We have shown how we can compute the explicit expressions and given detailed theoretical underpinnings. Moreover, with the help of $\mathrm{OGA}_{\mathrm{H}}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim, MRIC can even be used to identify the best subset across several high-dimensional misspecified time series models. It is hoped that filling the serious lacuna paves the way for the beginning of the final phase of the model selection enterprise started by Akaike, Mallows and others more than forty years ago.

Finally, in all the model selection criteria discussed in this paper, estimation of unknown parameters is rooted in the likelihood function or its equivalents. For misspecified models, attempts to justify the likelihood-based approach to estimation are often made by reference to the Kullbeck-Leibler information, which is well known to be not a distance measure. However, alternative (i.e., nonlikelihoodbased) approaches are available and beginning to attract attention; see, for example, Davies (2008), Xia and Tong (2011) and others. Therefore, it remains a future challenge to develop a model selection criterion via a nonlikelihood-based approach.

## APPENDIX: ON MODEL MISSPECIFICATION

This appendix provides a definition of "model misspecification" with respect to (w.r.t.) an increasing sequence of $\sigma$-fields, $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$, satisfying $\sigma\left(\mathbf{x}_{j}, j \leq t\right) \subseteq \mathcal{G}_{t} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$, where $\mathbf{x}_{j}$ and $\mathcal{F}$ are defined at the beginning of Section 2 and $\sigma\left(\mathbf{x}_{j}, j \leq t\right)$ denotes the $\sigma$-field generated by $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{j}, j \leq t\right\}$. Model (2.3) is said to be correctly specified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$ if for any $-\infty<t<\infty$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t}\right)=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t} \quad \text { almost surely } \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

otherwise it is called misspecified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$.
If (A.1) holds true, then it is easy to see that $\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t-j} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)=\mathbf{0}$ for any $j \geq 0$, where $\varepsilon_{t, h}=y_{t+h}-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}$. To gain a better understanding of the concept of model misspecification, we assume that the data are generated by the following model:

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=a x_{t}+b w_{t}+\varepsilon_{t+1} \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a b \neq 0,\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$ is a sequence of i.i.d. random errors with $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1}\right)=0$ and $0<$ $\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1}^{2}\right)<\infty$, and $\left\{\left(x_{t}, w_{t}\right)^{\top}\right\}$ is a sequence of i.i.d. bivariate normal random vectors with $\mathrm{E}\left(x_{1}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(w_{1}\right)=0, \mathrm{E}\left(x_{1}^{2}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(w_{1}^{2}\right)=1$, and $0<\left|\sigma_{1,2}\right|=\left|\mathrm{E}\left(x_{1} w_{1}\right)\right|<1$. We also assume that $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\left(x_{t}, w_{t}\right)^{\top}\right\}$ are independent. Let $\mathcal{G}_{t}=\sigma\left(x_{j}, j \leq t\right)$. Then

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+1} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+1} \mid x_{t}\right)=\left(a+b \sigma_{1,2}\right) x_{t} \quad \text { almost surely. }
$$

Therefore, the simple regression model $\left(a+b \sigma_{1,2}\right) x_{t}$ is correctly specified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$.

Alternatively, assume in (A.2), $x_{t}=\xi x_{t-1}+\delta_{t}$ and $w_{t}=\theta w_{t-2}+\eta_{t}$, where $0<$ $|\xi|,|\theta|<1$ and $\left\{\left(\delta_{t}, \eta_{t}\right)^{\top}\right\}$ is a sequence of i.i.d. bivariate normal random vectors independent of $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$, and satisfies $\mathrm{E}\left(\delta_{1}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=0, \mathrm{E}\left(\delta_{1}^{2}\right)=1-\xi^{2}, \mathrm{E}\left(\eta_{1}^{2}\right)=$ $1-\theta^{2}$, and $0<v_{1,2}^{2}=\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\delta_{1} \eta_{1}\right)\right)^{2}<\left(1-\xi^{2}\right)\left(1-\theta^{2}\right)$. Then it can be shown that

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+1} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
=a x_{t}+\frac{b v_{1,2}}{1-\xi^{2}} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \theta^{j}\left(x_{t-2 j}-\xi x_{t-2 j-1}\right) \quad \text { almost surely } \tag{A.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence the simple regression model $\beta_{1,1} x_{t}$, where

$$
\beta_{1,1}=a+\frac{b v_{1,2}}{1-\theta \xi^{2}}=\arg \min _{c \in R} \mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+1}-c x_{t}\right)^{2}
$$

is no longer correctly specified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$. Moreover, since

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+1} \mid \mathcal{G}_{t}^{\prime}\right)=a x_{t}+b w_{t} \quad \text { almost surely }
$$

where $\mathcal{G}_{t}^{\prime}=\sigma\left(x_{j}, w_{j}, j \leq t\right)$, the model on the right-hand side of (A.3) is correctly specified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}\right\}$, but misspecified w.r.t. $\left\{\mathcal{G}_{t}^{\prime}\right\}$.

Acknowledgments. We would like to thank an Associate Editor and two anonymous referees for their insightful and constructive comments, which greatly improved the presentation of this paper.

## SUPPLEMENTARY MATERIAL

Supplement to "On model selection from a finite family of possibly misspecified time series models" (DOI: 10.1214/18-AOS1706SUPP; .pdf). The supplementary material contains the proofs of all theorems, an extension of MRIC to a class of nonlinear models and simulation studies and real data analysis to illustrate the performance of the proposed methods in both low- and high-dimensional cases.

## REFERENCES

Akaike, H. (1974). A new look at the statistical model identification. IEEE Trans. Automat. Control 19716-723. MR0423716
Akaike, H. (1978). On the likelihood of a time series model. J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. D 217-235.
BASU, S. and Michailidis, G. (2015). Regularized estimation in sparse high-dimensional time series models. Ann. Statist. 43 1535-1567. MR3357870
Bickel, P. J., Ritov, Y. and Tsybakov, A. B. (2009). Simultaneous analysis of lasso and Dantzig selector. Ann. Statist. 37 1705-1732. MR2533469
Bozdogan, H. (2000). Akaike's information criterion and recent developments in information complexity. J. Math. Psych. 44 62-91. MR1770002
Burnham, K. P. and Anderson, D. R. (2002). Model Selection and Multimodel Inference: A Practical Information-Theoretic Approach, 2nd ed. Springer, New York. MR1919620
Chan, N. H. and Ing, C.-K. (2011). Uniform moment bounds of Fisher's information with applications to time series. Ann. Statist. 39 1526-1550. MR2850211
DaVies, P. L. (2008). Approximating data (with discussion). J. Korean Statist. Soc. 37 191-240.
FAN, J. and LV, J. (2008). Sure independence screening for ultrahigh dimensional feature space. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol. 70 849-911. MR2530322

Findley, D. F. (1991). Counterexamples to parsimony and BIC. Ann. Inst. Statist. Math. 43 505514. MR1143638

Findley, D. F. and Wei, C. Z. (1993). Moment bounds for deriving time series CLTs and model selection procedures. Statist. Sinica 3 453-480. MR1243396
Findley, D. F. and Wei, C.-Z. (2002). AIC, overfitting principles, and the boundedness of moments of inverse matrices for vector autoregressions and related models. J. Multivariate Anal. 83 415-450. MR1945962
Greenaway-McGrevy, R. (2013). Multistep prediction of panel vector autoregressive processes. Econometric Theory 29 699-734. MR3092461
Greenaway-McGrevy, R. (2015). Evaluating panel data forecasts under independent realization. J. Multivariate Anal. 136 108-125. MR3321483

Hsu, H.-L., Ing, C.-K. and Tong, H. (2019). Supplement to "On model selection from a finite family of possibly misspecified time series models." DOI:10.1214/18-AOS1706SUPP.
Ing, C.-K. (2003). Multistep prediction in autoregressive processes. Econometric Theory 19254 279. MR1966030

ING, C.-K. (2007). Accumulated prediction errors, information criteria and optimal forecasting for autoregressive time series. Ann. Statist. 35 1238-1277. MR2341705

Ing, C.-K. and Lai, T. L. (2011). A stepwise regression method and consistent model selection for high-dimensional sparse linear models. Statist. Sinica 21 1473-1513. MR2895106
Ing, C.-K. and WeI, C.-Z. (2003). On same-realization prediction in an infinite-order autoregressive process. J. Multivariate Anal. 85 130-155. MR1978181
ING, C.-K. and WEI, C.-Z. (2005). Order selection for same-realization predictions in autoregressive processes. Ann. Statist. 33 2423-2474. MR2211091
Inoue, A. and Kilian, L. (2006). On the selection of forecasting models. J. Econometrics 130 273-306. MR2211796
Konishi, S. and Kitagawa, G. (1996). Generalised information criteria in model selection. Biometrika 83 875-890. MR1440051
Li, K.-C. (1987). Asymptotic optimality for $C_{p}, C_{L}$, cross-validation and generalized crossvalidation: Discrete index set. Ann. Statist. 15 958-975. MR0902239
LiU, W. and Yang, Y. (2011). Parametric or nonparametric? A parametricness index for model selection. Ann. Statist. 39 2074-2102. MR2893862
LV, J. and LIU, J. S. (2014). Model selection principles in misspecified models. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol. 76 141-167. MR3153937

Mallows, C. L. (1973). Some comments on $C_{p}$. Technometrics 15 661-675.
NISHII, R. (1984). Asymptotic properties of criteria for selection of variables in multiple regression. Ann. Statist. 12 758-765. MR0740928
RaO, C. R. and WU, Y. H. (1989). A strongly consistent procedure for model selection in a regression problem. Biometrika 76 369-374. MR1016028
SCHORFHEIDE, F. (2005). VAR forecasting under misspecification. J. Econometrics 128 99-136. MR2022928
SCHWARZ, G. (1978). Estimating the dimension of a model. Ann. Statist. 6 461-464. MR0468014
ShaO, J. (1997). An asymptotic theory for linear model selection. Statist. Sinica 7 221-264. MR1466682
Shibata, R. (1976). Selection of the order of an autoregressive model by Akaike's information criterion. Biometrika 63 117-126. MR0403130
Shibata, R. (1980). Asymptotically efficient selection of the order of the model for estimating parameters of a linear process. Ann. Statist. 8 147-164. MR0557560
Shibata, R. (1981). An optimal selection of regression variables. Biometrika 68 45-54. MR0614940
Sin, C.-Y. and White, H. (1996). Information criteria for selecting possibly misspecified parametric models. J. Econometrics 71 207-225. MR1381082
Stone, C. J. (1977). Consistent nonparametric regression. Ann. Statist. 5 595-645. MR0443204
TAKEUCHI, K. (1976). The distribution of information statistic and the criterion of the adequacy of a model. Suri-Kagaku (Mathematical Sciences) 3 12-18.
Tibshirani, R. (1996). Regression shrinkage and selection via the lasso. J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B 58 267-288. MR1379242
van Erven, T., Grünwald, P. and de Rooij, S. (2012). Catching up faster by switching sooner: A predictive approach to adaptive estimation with an application to the AIC-BIC dilemma. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol. 74 361-417. MR2925369
WANG, H. (2009). Forward regression for ultra-high dimensional variable screening. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 104 1512-1524. MR2750576
WEI, C. Z. (1992). On predictive least squares principles. Ann. Statist. 20 1-42. MR1150333
WU, W.-B. and WU, Y. N. (2016). Performance bounds for parameter estimates of highdimensional linear models with correlated errors. Electron. J. Stat. 10 352-379. MR3466186
XiA, Y. and Tong, H. (2011). Feature matching (with discussion). Statist. Sci. 26 21-46.
YANG, Y. (2007). Prediction/estimation with simple linear models: Is it really that simple? Econometric Theory 23 1-36. MR2338950

ZHANG, Y. and Yang, Y. (2015). Cross-validation for selecting a model selection procedure. J. Econometrics 187 95-112. MR3347297

H.-L. Hsu<br>Institute of Statistics<br>National University of Kaohsiung<br>700 Kaohsiung Road<br>Kaohsiung 811<br>Taiwan<br>E-MAIL: hsuhl@nuk.edu.tw

C.-K. Ing<br>Institute of Statistics<br>National Tsing Hua University<br>101, Section 2, Kuang Fu Road<br>Hsinchu 30013<br>Taiwan<br>E-MAIL: cking@stat.nthu.edu.tw

H. Tong<br>University of Electronic Science \& Technology<br>4, Section 2, North Jianshe Road<br>Chengdu, Sichuan 610054<br>China<br>And<br>Department of Statistics<br>London School of ECONOMICS<br>Houghton Street<br>London WC2A 2AE<br>United Kingdom<br>E-MAIL: howell.tong@gmail.com

# Supplement to "On model selection from a finite family of possibly misspecified time series models" 

By Hsiang-Ling Hsu, Ching-Kang Ing, and Howell Tong<br>National University of Kaohsiung, National Tsing Hua University, and University of Electronic Science \& Technology and London School of Economics

The supplementary material consists of 6 sections. The proofs of the theorems in Sections 2-4 of Hsu et al. (2018) are given in Sections S1-S3, respectively. Section S4 provides an extension of MRIC to a class of nonlinear models. Section S5 compares the performance of MRIC with AIC, BIC, GAIC, GBIC, and $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ in both low- and high-dimensional cases based on simulated data. The performance of these criteria is also compared via two real datasets in Section S6.

S1. Proof of Theorem 2.1. In view of (2.8), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
N\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{n}\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\right)\right\}:=(\mathrm{I})+(\mathrm{II}) \tag{S1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $(\mathrm{I})=-2 \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}_{N}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)$ and $(\mathrm{II})=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}_{N}^{-1} N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{2}$. It is shown in Lemma S 1.1 below that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathrm{I})=-2 \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)+o(1):=(\mathrm{III})+o(1) \tag{S1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathrm{II})=\mathrm{E}\left\{\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)\right\}+o(1):=(\mathrm{IV})+o(1) \tag{S1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (C2), it follows that

$$
\begin{align*}
& (\mathrm{IV})=\frac{1}{N} \mathrm{E}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}\right)+\frac{2}{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} \sum_{k=j+1}^{N} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{k} \varepsilon_{j, h} \varepsilon_{k, h}\right)  \tag{S1.4}\\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left\{\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)\right\}+\frac{2}{N}\left\{\sum_{j=1}^{N-1}(N-j) \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right)\right\} \\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left\{\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)\right\}+2 \sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left\{\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{1+s, h}\right)\right\} \\
& +2 \sum_{j=h}^{N-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right)-\frac{2}{N} \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} j \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)\right)+2 \sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{1+s, h}\right)\right) \\
& +2 \sum_{j=h}^{N-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right)+o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& (\mathrm{III})=-2 \sum_{j=h}^{n-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right) \\
& =-2 \sum_{j=h}^{N-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{x}_{j+1} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{j+1, h}\right)+o(1) . \tag{S1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Since the third term on the right-hand side of (S1.4) and the first term on the right-hand side of (S1.5) cancel out each other, it follows from (S1.1)-(S1.5) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}^{\top}(h) \mathbf{x}_{n}\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\right)\right\} \\
& =\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)\right)+2 \sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{1+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{1+s, h}\right)\right)+o(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

yielding the desired conclusion.

Lemma S1.1. Under the assumptions of Theorem 2.1, (S1.2) and (S1.3) follow.

Proof. Let $\left\{l_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence of positive integers satisfying $l_{n} \rightarrow \infty$ and $l_{n} / n^{1 / 2}=o(1)$. By (2.14) in (C6), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \varepsilon_{n, h} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|^{3}\right) \leq \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-l_{n}}\right)\right\|^{3}\right)=o(1) \tag{S1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, (2.13) in (C6) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)-\mathbf{R}\right\|^{3}=o(1) \tag{S1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

It suffices for (S1.2) to prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right) \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)=o(1) \tag{S1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

To show (S1.8), first observe that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right) \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)  \tag{S1.9}\\
& =\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right) \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)+\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right) \sum_{t=n-l_{n}-h+1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right) \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right) \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}-h} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right):=(\mathrm{I})+(\mathrm{II})+(\mathrm{III}),
\end{align*}
$$

where $\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}=\left(n-l_{n}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}} \mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}$. Since for large $n$,

$$
\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\| \leq\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\|\left\|\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\|\left(\left\|\frac{1}{N} \sum_{t=n-l_{n}+1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}\right\|+\left\|\left(\frac{1}{N}-\frac{1}{n-l_{n}}\right) \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}} \mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}\right\|\right)
$$

This, together with (2.12), (2.9), and Hölder's inequality, yields for any $0<\gamma \leq 5$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\|^{\gamma}=O\left(\left(l_{n} / n\right)^{\gamma}\right) \tag{S1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying Hölder's inequality again, we have
$(\mathrm{I}) \leq\left(\mathrm{E}\left|\varepsilon_{n, h}\right|^{6}\right)^{1 / 6}\left(\left\|\mathbf{x}_{n}\right\|^{6}\right)^{1 / 6}\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}\right\|^{3}\right)^{1 / 3}\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|^{3}\right)^{1 / 3}$.
By (S1.10), (S1.11), (C3) and (C4), it holds that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathrm{I})=o\left(l_{n} / n^{1 / 2}\right)=o(1) \tag{S1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

An argument similar to that used to prove (S1.10) yields for any $0<$ $\gamma \leq 5$,
(S1.13) $\mathrm{E}\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right\|^{\gamma}=O\left(n^{-\gamma / 2}\right), \quad \mathrm{E}\left\|\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right\|^{\gamma}=O\left(n^{-\gamma / 2}\right)$.
By making use of (S1.13), Hölder's inequality, (C3), (C4) and (S1.6), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathrm{II})=O\left(\left(l_{n} / n\right)^{1 / 2}\right)=o(1) \tag{S1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& (\mathrm{III}) \leq\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\widetilde{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right\|^{3}\right)^{1 / 3}\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}-h} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{n, h}\right\|^{3}\right)^{1 / 3}  \tag{S1.15}\\
& \times\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \varepsilon_{n, h} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|^{3}\right)\right)^{1 / 3}=o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

Consequently, (S1.8) follows from (S1.9), (S1.12), (S1.14) and (S1.15).
To show (S1.3), let

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathbf{M}_{1}=\mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right) N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}, \mathbf{M}_{2}=\mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1} N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}, \\
\mathbf{M}_{3}=\left(N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1}\left(N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{n, h}\right), \mathbf{u}_{n}=N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}-h} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h} .
\end{array}
$$

It follows that
(S1.16) $\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1} N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{n} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{1}^{2}\right)+\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{2}^{2}\right)+2 \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{1} \mathbf{M}_{2}\right)$.

Moreover, by (C3), (C4), (S1.13), (S1.7) and Hölder's inequality, we have
$\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{1}^{2}\right) \leq\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{x}_{n}\right\|^{10}\right)^{1 / 5}\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}-\mathbf{R}^{-1}\right\|^{5}\right)^{2 / 5}\left(\mathrm{E}\left\|N^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|^{5}\right)^{2 / 5}=O\left(n^{-1}\right)$, and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{2}^{2}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{3}\right)+\mathrm{E}\left\{\mathbf{u}_{n}^{\top} \mathbf{R}^{-1}\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)-\mathbf{R}\right) \mathbf{R}^{-1} \mathbf{u}_{n}\right\}+O\left(\left(l_{n} / n\right)^{1 / 2}\right)  \tag{S1.18}\\
& =\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{3}\right)+O\left(\left\{\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{u}_{n}\right\|^{3}\right\}^{2 / 3}\left\{\mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{n} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)-\mathbf{R}\right\|^{3}\right\}^{1 / 3}\right)+O\left(\left(l_{n} / n\right)^{1 / 2}\right) \\
& =\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{M}_{3}\right)+o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

Consequently, (S1.3) follows from (S1.16)-(S1.18).

S2. Proof of Theorems 3.1 and 3.2. Proof of Theorem 3.1. It suffices to show (3.12) and (3.13). To show (3.12), first note that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}-N^{-2}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right) \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)  \tag{S2.1}\\
& =\mathrm{E}\left(\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}\right)+N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left\{\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
& -N^{-2}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right) \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

In addition, by (3.20) and the non-singularity of $\mathbf{R}(l)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l)\right\|=O_{p}(1), \tag{S2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, together with (3.19), yields $N^{-2}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)^{\top}} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right) \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l)\left(\sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\right)=$ $O_{p}\left(n^{-1}\right)$. Thus, (S2.1) and (3.17) in turn imply (3.12).

To show (3.13), we first dissect $\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}(l)$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}(l)=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)}  \tag{S2.3}\\
& -N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}(h)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)} \\
& -N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}(h)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)} \\
& +N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}(h)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{(l)^{\top}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n, l}(h)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h, l}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

By (S2.2) and (3.19)-(3.21), it can be shown that the last three terms on the right-hand side of (S2.3) are of order $o_{p}(1)$. Combining this with (3.18) leads to the desired conclusion (3.13).

Proof of Theorem 3.2. For notational simplicity, we shall suppress $(l)$ in $\mathbf{x}_{t}^{(l)}, \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}, J_{v}^{(l)}$ and $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}(l)$. It follows from (3.23)-(3.25) and (3.29) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{w}_{j, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}, s_{t}^{(v)}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{w}_{j, v}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}, \varepsilon_{t, h}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{w}_{j, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{t+h-j}, \tag{S2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{w}_{j, y}$ and $\mathbf{w}_{j, v}$ are some non-random vectors satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\mathbf{w}_{j, y}\right\| \leq c^{*}(j+1)^{-s},\left\|\mathbf{w}_{j, v}\right\| \leq c^{*}(j+1)^{-s} \tag{S2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $0<c^{*}<\infty$ and all $j \geq 0$ and $1 \leq v \leq p$. Moreover, since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h} y_{t-j}\right)=0, j \in J_{0} \text { and } \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h} s_{t-j}^{(v)}\right)=0, j \in J_{v}, 1 \leq v \leq p \tag{S2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

it holds that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{w}_{k, y}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{k+h+j, 0}=0, j \in J_{0} \\
& \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \mathbf{w}_{k, v}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{k+h+j, 0}=0, j \in J_{v}, 1 \leq v \leq p \tag{S2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Lambda=\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{v}_{t} \mathbf{v}_{t}^{\top}\right)$.
By (3.27) and (S2.4)-(S2.6), it is not difficult to show that conditions (C3) and (C6) follow. Moreover, since (S2.5) ensures that the autocovariance functions of $y_{t}, s_{t}^{(v)}$ and $\varepsilon_{t, h}$ are square summable, by (3.27), (S2.4), (S2.6) and the First Moment Bound Theorem of Findley and Wei (1993), it can be shown that conditions (C1) and (C4) also hold true. The proof of condition (C5) is complicated and deferred to Lemma S2.1 below. The first statement of condition (C2) is obviously guaranteed by (S2.4) and the hypothesis that the fourth moments of $\left\{\mathbf{v}_{t}\right\}$ are independent of $t$, whereas the second one holds if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { each component of } n \mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{1} \mathbf{x}_{n}^{\top} \varepsilon_{1, h} \varepsilon_{n, h}\right) \text { converges to } 0, \tag{S2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

noting that $\mathbf{x}_{t}=\left(y_{t-j}, j \in J_{0}, s_{t-j}^{(v)}, j \in J_{v}, 1 \leq v \leq p\right)^{\top}$.
In the following, we shall prove

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h} y_{1} \varepsilon_{n, h} y_{n}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right) \tag{S2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

instead of (S2.8) because their proofs are exactly the same. Dissect $y_{n}$ and $\varepsilon_{n, h}$ as $y_{n}=y_{n}^{*}+\tilde{y}_{n}$ and $\varepsilon_{n, h}=\varepsilon_{n, h}^{*}+\tilde{\varepsilon}_{n, h}$, where $y_{n}^{*}=$ $\sum_{j=0}^{n-2-h} \mathbf{w}_{j, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{n-j}$ and $\varepsilon_{n, h}^{*}=\sum_{j=0}^{n-2} \mathbf{w}_{j, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{n+h-j}$. Since $\left(y_{n}^{*}, \varepsilon_{n, h}^{*}\right)$ is independent of ( $y_{1}, \varepsilon_{1, h}$ ), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h} y_{1} \varepsilon_{n, h} y_{n}\right)=\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h} y_{1} \tilde{\varepsilon}_{n, h} \tilde{y}_{n}\right)  \tag{S2.10}\\
& =\mathrm{E}\left\{\sum_{j_{1}=-\infty}^{1+h} \sum_{j_{2}=-\infty}^{1+h} \sum_{j_{3}=-\infty}^{1+h} \sum_{j_{4}=-\infty}^{1+h} \mathbf{w}_{1-j_{1}, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j_{1}} \mathbf{w}_{1+h-j_{2}, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j_{2}} \mathbf{w}_{n-j_{3}, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j_{3}} \mathbf{w}_{n+h-j_{4}, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j_{4}}\right\} \\
& =\mathrm{E}\left\{\sum_{j=-\infty}^{1+h} \mathbf{w}_{1-j, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j} \mathbf{w}_{1+h-j, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j} \mathbf{w}_{n-j, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j} \mathbf{w}_{n+h-j, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{j}\right\} \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left\{\sum_{\substack{-\infty<m, k \leq 1+h \\
m \neq k}} \mathbf{w}_{1-m, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{m} \mathbf{v}_{m}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{1+h-m, 0} \mathbf{w}_{n-k, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{k} \mathbf{v}_{k}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0}\right\} \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left\{\sum_{\substack{-\infty<m, k \leq 1+h \\
m \neq k}} \mathbf{w}_{1-m, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{m} \mathbf{v}_{m}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{n-m, y} \mathbf{w}_{1+h-k, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{k} \mathbf{v}_{k}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0}\right\} \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left\{\sum_{\substack{-\infty<m, k \leq 1+h \\
m \neq k}} \mathbf{w}_{1-m, y}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{m} \mathbf{v}_{m}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{n+h-m, 0} \mathbf{w}_{1+h-k, 0}^{\top} \mathbf{v}_{k} \mathbf{v}_{k}^{\top} \mathbf{w}_{n-k, y}\right\} \\
& =(\mathrm{I})+(\mathrm{II})+(\mathrm{III})+(\mathrm{IV}),
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathbf{w}_{s, y}$ is set to $\mathbf{0}$ when $s<0$. By (3.27) and (S2.5), it holds that
$|(\mathrm{I})| \leq \sum_{j=-\infty}^{1+h} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathbf{v}_{j}\right\|^{4}\left(\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1-j, y}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1+h-j, 0}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n-j, y}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n+h-j, 0}\right\|\right)=O\left(n^{-2 s}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right)$.
Using the first relation of (S2.7) with $j=0$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\text { II })=\sum_{k=-\infty}^{1+h} \mathbf{w}_{n-k, y}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0}\left(\sum_{m=-\infty, m \neq k}^{1+h} \mathbf{w}_{1-m, y}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{1+h-m, 0}\right) \\
& =-\sum_{k=-\infty}^{1+h} \mathbf{w}_{n-k, y}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0} \mathbf{w}_{1-k, y}^{\top} \Lambda \mathbf{w}_{1+h-k, 0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|(\mathrm{II})| \leq\|\Lambda\|^{2} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{1+h}\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n-k, y}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1-k, y}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1+h-k, 0}\right\|=O\left(n^{-2 s}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right) \tag{S2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Straightforward calculations and (S2.5) yield

$$
\begin{align*}
& |(\mathrm{III})|=O\left(\sum_{k=-\infty}^{1+h}\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1+h-k, 0}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n+h-k, 0}\right\|\left(\sum_{m=-\infty, m \neq k}^{1+h}\left\|\mathbf{w}_{1-m, y}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{w}_{n-m, y}\right\|\right)\right)  \tag{S2.13}\\
& =O\left(n^{-4 s+2}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|(\mathrm{IV})|=O\left(n^{-4 s+2}\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right) \tag{S2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The desired conclusion (S2.9) (and hence (S2.8)) now follows from (S2.10)-(S2.14).

It remains to show that (3.17)-(3.21) hold true. Note first that (3.17) is an immediate consequence of (S2.4), (S2.5), and the First Moment Bound Theorem of Findley and Wei (1993). To prove (3.18), define $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{(t)}=\left[c_{h, s}^{(t)}(i, j)\right]=\mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t+s}^{\top} \varepsilon_{t, h} \varepsilon_{t+s, h}$. Express $\mathbf{C}_{h, s}$ as $\left[c_{h, s}(i, j)\right]$ and let
$D_{h, s}^{(t)}(i, j)=c_{h, s}^{(t)}(i, j)-c_{h, s}(i, j)$. By (3.27), (S2.4), (S2.5) and tedious algebraic manipulations, we obtain for each $1 \leq i, j \leq S_{p} \equiv \sum_{v=0}^{p} \sharp\left(J_{v}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{|m-k|=r}\left|\mathrm{E}\left(D_{h, s}^{(m)}(i, j) D_{h, s}^{(k)}(i, j)\right)\right| \rightarrow 0, \text { as } r \rightarrow \infty \tag{S2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

yielding $n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} D_{h, s}^{(t)}(i, j)=o_{p}(1)$, which in turn implies (3.18). Conditions (3.19), (3.20) and (3.21) are ensured by (C4), (C1) and (C3), which have been proved previously.

Lemma S2.1. Assume (3.23)-(3.25) and (3.28). Then condition (C5) follows.

Proof. In view of Theorem 2.1 of Chan and Ing (2011), it suffices for (C5) to show that (2.19) holds true. By (S2.4), there exist $S_{p} \times(p+1)$ matrices $H_{j}, j \geq 0$, with $\left\|H_{j}\right\| \leq \bar{c}(j+1)^{-s}$ for some $0<\bar{c}<\infty$, such that $\mathbf{x}_{t}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} H_{j} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}$. Moreover, by (S2.4), the independence between $\left\{\boldsymbol{\delta}_{t}(p)\right\}$ and $\left\{\epsilon_{t}\right\}$, and the positive definiteness of $\Sigma_{p}$, it can be shown that $\lambda_{\min }\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t} \mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top}\right)\right)>\delta_{0}$ for some positive constant $\delta_{0}$. These facts yield that for a given $\delta_{1}^{*}<\delta_{0}$, there exists a positive integer $D$ such that for all $t \geq D$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\min }\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\mathbf{x}_{t, D} \mathbf{x}_{t, D}^{\top}\right)\right)>\delta_{1}^{*}, \tag{S2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{x}_{t, D}=\sum_{j=0}^{D-1} H_{j} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}$. Since (S2.16) ensures that $\mathrm{E}\left(\boldsymbol{s}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t, D}\right)^{2}=$ $\sum_{j=0}^{D-1} \boldsymbol{s}^{\top} H_{j} \Lambda H_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{s} \geq \delta_{1}^{*}$ for any $\|\boldsymbol{s}\|=1$, there is an integer $0 \leq j(\boldsymbol{s}) \leq$
$D-1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
s^{\top} H_{j(s)} \Lambda H_{j(s)}^{\top} s \geq \delta_{1}^{*} / D \tag{S2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\mathcal{F}_{t, j(\boldsymbol{s})}=\left\{\mathbf{v}_{t}, \ldots, \mathbf{v}_{t-j(\boldsymbol{s})+1}, \mathbf{v}_{t-j(\boldsymbol{s})-1}, \ldots\right\}$ and $\eta_{j(s)}=\boldsymbol{s}^{\top} H_{j(\boldsymbol{s})} H_{j(\boldsymbol{s})}^{\top} \boldsymbol{s}$. Then, by (3.28) and (S2.17), it follows that for any $\|s\|=1$, any $t \geq D$,
and any $0<s_{2}-s_{1} \leq \delta_{1} \sqrt{\delta_{1}^{*} / D} \lambda_{\max }^{-1 / 2}(\Lambda)$, where $\delta_{1}$ is defined in (3.28),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left(s_{1}<s^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t} \leq s_{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-D}\right) \\
= & \mathrm{E}\left\{P\left(s_{1}<\boldsymbol{s}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t} \leq s_{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t, j(s)}\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-D}\right\} \\
= & \left(\mathrm{E}^{2}\left\{\left.P\left(\frac{s_{1}-\sum_{\substack{j=0 \\
j \neq j(s)}}^{\infty} s^{\top} H_{j} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}}{\sqrt{\eta_{j(\boldsymbol{s})}}}<\frac{s^{\top} H_{j(s)} \mathbf{v}_{t-j(s)}-\sum_{\substack{j=0 \\
j \neq j(s)}}^{\infty} s^{\top} H_{j} \mathbf{v}_{t-j}}{\sqrt{\eta_{j(\boldsymbol{s})}}} \leq \frac{\mathcal{F}_{t, j(s)}}{\eta_{j(\boldsymbol{s})}}\right) \right\rvert\, \mathcal{F}_{t-D}\right\}\right. \\
\leq & K_{1}\left(\sqrt{\frac{D \lambda_{\max }(\Lambda)}{\delta_{1}^{*}}}\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\right)^{v} \quad \text { almost surely, }
\end{aligned}
$$

recalling that $\mathcal{F}_{t}=\sigma\left(\mathbf{v}_{t}, \mathbf{v}_{t-1}, \ldots\right)$. Consequently, (2.19) holds with $\mathcal{F}_{t}=\sigma\left(\mathbf{v}_{t}, \mathbf{v}_{t-1}, \ldots\right), \alpha=v, \delta=\delta_{1} \sqrt{\delta_{1}^{*} / D} \lambda_{\max }^{-1 / 2}(\Lambda), M=K_{1}\left(D \lambda_{\max }(\Lambda) / \delta_{1}^{*}\right)^{v / 2}$, and $D$ given above.

S3. Proofs of Theorems 4.1-4.3. We first define a 'noiseless' OGA with parameter $0<\xi \leq 1$. The algorithm is initialized by setting $\tilde{J}_{0, \xi}=\emptyset$ and $\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(0)} \equiv \boldsymbol{u}_{h}=\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}^{\top} \mathbf{x}_{t}, t=1, \ldots, N\right)^{\top}$. For $1 \leq m \leq p$, the algorithm updates $\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}$ and $\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}$ recursively as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{J}_{m, \xi}=\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi} \bigcup\left\{\tilde{j}_{m, \xi}\right\}, \\
& \mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}=\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\tilde{j}_{m, \xi}$ is any $l \in\{1, \ldots, p\}-\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, l}\right| \geq \xi \max _{1 \leq j \leq p, j \notin \tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, j}\right| \tag{S3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}=\mathbf{X}_{i}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{J}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h} /\left(N^{1 / 2}\left\|\mathbf{X}_{i}\right\|\right)$. Although the noiseless OGA cannot be implemented in practice, the rate of convergence of $N^{-1}\left\|\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}\right\|^{2}$ plays an important role in our theoretical analysis. The next lemma provides a uniform bound for $N^{-1}\left\|\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}\right\|^{2}$.

Lemma S3.1. Assume (F4). Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{1 \leq m \leq p} \frac{N^{-1}\left\|\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}\right\|^{2}}{\frac{1}{1+m \xi^{2}}}=O_{p}(1) \tag{S3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Note that

$$
\begin{align*}
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \\
& \leq N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}-\frac{\mathbf{X}_{\tilde{j}_{m, \xi}^{\top}}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}}{\left\|\mathbf{X}_{\tilde{j}_{m, \xi}}\right\|^{2}} \mathbf{X}_{\tilde{j}_{m, \xi}}\right\|^{2}  \tag{S3.3}\\
& =N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, \tilde{j}_{m, \xi}}^{2} \\
& \leq N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}-\xi_{1 \leq j \leq p, j \notin \tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}^{2}}^{\max _{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, j}^{2}}
\end{align*}
$$

We also have

$$
\begin{align*}
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}=\sum_{j=1, j \notin \tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}^{p} \beta_{j, h}^{*} \hat{\rho}_{j, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\nu}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, j}  \tag{S3.4}\\
& \leq \max _{1 \leq j \leq p, j \notin \tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}, j}\right| \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*}\right| \hat{\rho}_{j, j}^{1 / 2}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\hat{\rho}_{i, j}=N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i} z_{t, j}$. Let $S_{n}=\left(\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*}\right| \hat{\rho}_{j, j}^{1 / 2}\right)^{2}$. By (S3.3), (S3.4), and some algebraic manipulations, one obtains

$$
\begin{align*}
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{0, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}=N^{-1}\left\|\boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \leq S_{n}  \tag{S3.5}\\
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \\
& \leq N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}\left\{1-\frac{\xi^{2} N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m-1, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}}{S_{n}}\right\},
\end{align*}
$$

for each $1 \leq m \leq p$. By (S3.5) and Lemma 3.1 of Temlyakov (2000), it holds that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{1 \leq m \leq p} \frac{N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}}{\frac{1}{1+m \xi^{2}}} \leq S_{n} \tag{S3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, since (F4) and Minkowski's inequality yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(S_{n}\right) \leq\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*}\right|\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(\hat{\rho}_{j, j}\right)\right\}^{1 / 2}\right]^{2} \leq G_{1}^{2} \tag{S3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

the desired conclusion (S3.2) follows from (S3.7) and (S3.6).

The following lemma shows that when the $\mathbf{H}_{\tilde{J}_{m, \xi}}$ in $\mathbf{f}_{\xi}^{(m)}$ is replaced by $\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}$, a similar uniform bound can be obtained over a narrower range of $m$.

Lemma S3.2. Assume (F1)-(F5). Suppose $K_{n}=\min \left\{p, \bar{l}_{n}\right\}$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{l}_{n} \rightarrow \infty \text { and } \bar{l}_{n}^{1+\max \left\{\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right\}}=o\left(n^{1 / 2} / p^{1 / q}\right) \tag{S3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{1 \leq m \leq K_{n}} \frac{N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}}{m^{-1}}=O_{p}(1) \tag{S3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By (F1) and (F2), it is not difficult to see that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{1 \leq i \leq p}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|=O_{p}\left(p^{1 / q_{2}} / n^{1 / 2}\right),  \tag{S3.10}\\
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}}\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|=O_{p}\left(K_{n}^{1 / 2} p^{1 / q_{2}} / n^{1 / 2}\right),  \tag{S3.11}\\
& \max _{1 \leq i, j \leq p}\left|\hat{\rho}_{i, j}-\rho_{i, j}\right|=O_{p}\left(p^{1 / q_{1}} / n^{1 / 2}\right), \tag{S3.12}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{1 \leq i \leq p}\left(N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i}^{2}\right)^{-1}=O_{p}(1) \tag{S3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (S3.12), the first relation of (F5), and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}^{1+\max \left\{\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right\}}=o\left(\frac{n^{1 / 2}}{p^{1 / q}}\right)(\text { which is ensured by }(\mathrm{S} 3.8)) \tag{S3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

further imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}(J)-\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J)\right\|=o_{p}\left(K_{n}^{\theta_{1}}\right), \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}(J)\right\|=O_{p}\left(K_{n}^{\theta_{1}}\right), \tag{S3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}(J)=\left(\hat{\rho}_{i, j}\right)_{i, j \in J}$. Recall the definition of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}$ in Section 4.1. In the following, we shall prove

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right|=O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right) . \tag{S3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

First observe that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right| \leq \max _{1 \leq i \leq p}\left(N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i}^{2}\right)^{-1 / 2}\left\{\max _{1 \leq i \leq p}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|\right.  \tag{S3.17}\\
& +\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) z_{t, i ; J}^{\perp}\right\|\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}(J)\right\|\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\| \\
& \left.+\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{g}_{i}^{\top}(J) \boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|\right\},
\end{align*}
$$

where $z_{t, i ; J}^{\perp}=z_{t, i}-\mathbf{g}_{i}^{\top}(J) \boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}(J)$. It follows from (S3.10) and the second relation of (F5) that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{g}_{i}^{\top}(J) \boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|  \tag{S3.18}\\
& \leq \max _{1 \leq i \leq p}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, i} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|_{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J} \max \left\|\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{g}_{i}(J)\right\|_{1}=O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

In addition, (S3.12) and the second relation of (F5) imply

$$
\begin{align*}
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) z_{t, i ; J}^{\perp}\right\| \\
& \leq K_{n}^{1 / 2} \max _{1 \leq i, j \leq p}\left|\hat{\rho}_{i, j}-\rho_{i, j}\right|\left(1+\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{g}_{i}(J)\right\|_{1}\right)  \tag{S3.19}\\
& =O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}+(1 / 2)} p^{1 / q_{1}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Combining (S3.10), (S3.11), (S3.13)-(S3.15), and (S3.17)-(S3.19) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right|=O_{p}\left(\frac{p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}+\frac{K_{n}^{1+\theta_{1}+\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{1}+1 / q_{2}}}{n}+\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right) \\
= & O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and hence (S3.16) follows.
Equation (S3.16) ensures that for any small $\epsilon>0$, there exists a large constant $V_{\epsilon}$ for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(\max _{\sharp(J) \leq K_{n}-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right|>V_{\epsilon} K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}} / n^{1 / 2}\right) \leq \epsilon . \tag{S3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $1 \leq m \leq K_{n}$, define

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{A}_{m} & =\left\{\max _{\sharp(J) \leq m-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right| \leq V_{\epsilon} K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}} / n^{1 / 2}\right\}, \\
\mathcal{B}_{m} & =\left\{\min _{0 \leq l \leq m-1} \max _{1 \leq i \leq p, i \notin \hat{J}_{l}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{l}, i}\right|>\{2 /(1-\xi)\} V_{\epsilon} K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}} / n^{1 / 2}\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $0<\xi<1$. Then, on the set $\mathcal{A}_{m} \bigcap \mathcal{B}_{m}$, we have for any $1 \leq l \leq m$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{l-1}, \hat{l}_{l}}\right| \geq-\max _{\sharp(J) \leq m-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right|+\max _{1 \leq i \leq p, i \notin \hat{J}_{l-1}}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{\hat{J}_{l-1}, i}\right|  \tag{S3.21}\\
& \geq-2 \max _{\sharp(J) \leq m-1, i \notin J}\left|\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{J, i}-\boldsymbol{\nu}_{J, i}\right|+\max _{1 \leq i \leq p, i \notin \hat{J}_{l-1}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{l-1}, i}\right| \geq \xi \max _{1 \leq i \leq p, i \notin \hat{J}_{l-1}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{l-1}, i}\right| .
\end{align*}
$$

Equation (S3.21) indicates that on the set $\mathcal{A}_{m} \bigcap \mathcal{B}_{m}$, the update rule of OGA obeys (S3.1), and hence by (S3.6),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}}{\frac{1}{1+m \xi^{2}}} \leq S_{n} \text { on } \mathcal{A}_{m} \bigcap \mathcal{B}_{m} \tag{S3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \leq \min _{0 \leq i \leq m-1} N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{i}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \\
& \leq \min _{0 \leq i \leq m-1} \sum_{j=1, j \notin \hat{J}_{i}}^{p}\left|\beta_{j, h}^{*} \| \boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{i}, j}\right| \hat{\rho}_{j, j}^{1 / 2}  \tag{S3.23}\\
& \leq \min _{0 \leq i \leq m-1} \max _{1 \leq j \leq p, j \notin \hat{J}_{i}}\left|\boldsymbol{\nu}_{\hat{J}_{i}, j}\right| S_{n}^{1 / 2} \leq \frac{2 V_{\epsilon} K_{n}^{\theta 2} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{(1-\xi) n^{1 / 2}} S_{n}^{1 / 2} \text { on } \mathcal{B}_{m}^{c} .
\end{align*}
$$

It follows from (S3.14), (S3.22), (S3.23), and $\mathcal{A}_{K_{n}} \subseteq \mathcal{A}_{m}$ for $1 \leq m \leq$ $K_{n}$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{1 \leq m \leq K_{n}} \frac{N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{m}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}}{m^{-1}} \leq V^{*}\left(S_{n}+S_{n}^{1 / 2}\right) \text { on } \mathcal{A}_{K_{n}} \tag{S3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $V^{*}$ is some positive constant depending only on $V_{\epsilon}$ and $\xi$. Now (S3.9) is an immediate consequence of (S3.24), (S3.20) and (S3.7).

We are now in a position to prove Theorems 4.1-4.3.
proof of Theorem 4.1. When $p$ is bounded above by a finite constant, the proof of Theorem 4.1 is obvious because $K_{n}=p$ for all large $n$. Therefore, we only focus on the case where $p \rightarrow \infty$. Let $\underline{K}_{n}=\min \left\{p, \bar{m}_{n}, \bar{l}_{n}\right\}$, where $\bar{l}_{n}$ is given in (S3.8). It follows from (S3.8), (4.5), (F4), $0 \leq \theta_{1}<1$, and $\underline{K}_{n} \rightarrow \infty$ that
$\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right) p^{1 / q_{1}} / n^{1 / 2}=o\left(\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right)^{-\theta_{1}}\right)$ and $\underline{K}_{n}^{-1}=o\left(\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right)^{-\theta_{1}}\right)$.
By Lemma S3.2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{\underline{K}_{n}}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}=O_{p}\left(\underline{K}_{n}^{-1}\right) \tag{S3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Straightforward calculations yield that on $Z_{n}=\left\{N_{h}-\hat{J}_{\underline{K}_{n}} \neq \emptyset\right\}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{\underline{K}_{n}}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2}  \tag{S3.27}\\
& \geq\left\{\min _{\sharp(J) \leq \underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)} \lambda_{\min }(\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J))-\max _{\sharp(J) \leq \underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)}\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}(J)-\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)\|\right\} \underline{\delta}^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, (F1) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{\sharp(J) \leq \underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)}\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}(J)-\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)\|=O_{p}\left(\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right) p^{1 / q_{1}} / n^{1 / 2}\right) . \tag{S3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Set $S_{1 n}=\left\{\max _{\sharp(J) \leq \underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)}\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}(J)-\boldsymbol{\Gamma}(J)\| \geq c_{1}\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right)^{-\theta_{1}} / 2\right\}$. Then, it follows from (S3.25)-(S3.28) and the first relation of (F5) that

$$
P\left(Z_{n}\right) \leq P\left(N^{-1}\left\|\left(\mathbf{I}_{N}-\mathbf{H}_{\hat{J}_{\underline{K}_{n}}}\right) \boldsymbol{u}_{h}\right\|^{2} \geq c_{1}\left(\underline{K}_{n}+\sharp\left(N_{h}\right)\right)^{-\theta_{1}} \underline{\delta}^{2} / 2\right)+P\left(S_{1 n}\right)=o(1)
$$

yielding $1+o(1)=P\left(Z_{n}^{c}\right) \leq P\left(N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{\underline{K}_{n}}\right) \leq P\left(N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right)$.

Proof of Theorem 4.2. Define $\tilde{k}_{n}=\min \left\{1 \leq k \leq K_{n}: N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{k}\right\}$ and $K_{n}+1$ if $N_{h}-\hat{J}_{K_{n}} \neq \emptyset$. In the following, we shall show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{k}_{n}=\tilde{k}_{n}\right)=1 \tag{S3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $E_{n}=\left\{N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right\}$. In view of Theorem 4.1,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(E_{n}\right)=1 \tag{S3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence (S3.29) is guaranteed by

$$
\begin{align*}
& P\left(\hat{k}_{n}<\tilde{k}_{n}, E_{n}\right)=o(1),  \tag{S3.31}\\
& P\left(\hat{k}_{n}>\tilde{k}_{n}, E_{n}\right)=o(1) .
\end{align*}
$$

To show the first identity of (S3.31), we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{z}_{n}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \leq \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right)-\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \leq \frac{\left(\tilde{k}_{n}-\hat{k}_{n}\right) p^{2 / q} \omega_{n}}{n} \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \text { on }\left\{\hat{k}_{n}<\tilde{k}_{n}\right\} \bigcap E_{n} \tag{S3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{z}_{n}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)=\underline{\delta}^{2} \lambda_{\min }\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)\right)-2 G_{1}\left\{\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, \hat{j}_{\bar{k}_{n}}} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|+\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right)\right\|\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|\right. \\
& \left.\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right) z_{t, \hat{j}_{\hat{k}_{n}} ; \hat{\vec{k}}_{\widehat{k}_{n}-1}}^{\perp}\right\|+\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{g}_{\hat{j}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}}^{\top}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right) \boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right) \mathbf{z}_{t}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}-1}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

By an argument similar to that used to prove Lemma S3.2, it can be shown that there exists $c_{3}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{z}_{n}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)>c_{3} K_{n}^{-\theta_{1}}\right)=1 \text { and } \frac{\left(\tilde{k}_{n}-\hat{k}_{n}\right) p^{2 / q} \omega_{n}}{n} \hat{\sigma}_{\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}}^{2}=O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n} p^{2 / q} \omega_{n}}{n}\right) . \tag{S3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from (4.11), (4.12), (S3.32), and (S3.33) that

$$
P\left(\hat{k}_{n}<\tilde{k}_{n}, E_{n}\right) \leq P\left(\hat{z}_{n}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \leq\left(\tilde{k}_{n}-\hat{k}_{n}\right) p^{2 / q} \omega_{n} \hat{\sigma}_{\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}}^{2} / n\right)=o(1)
$$

and hence the first identity of (S3.31) holds true.

Next we prove the second identity of (S3.31). To this end, note that
$\left(1+\frac{\hat{k}_{n} \omega_{n} p^{2 / q}}{n}\right)\left(\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)-\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right)\right) \geq \frac{\left(\hat{k}_{n}-\tilde{k}_{n}\right) \omega_{n} p^{2 / q}}{n} \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)$ on $\left\{\tilde{k}_{n}<\hat{k}_{n}\right\} \bigcap E_{n}$.
Since $\hat{k}_{n} \omega_{n} p^{2 / q} / n \leq K_{n} \omega_{n} p^{2 / q} / n=o(1)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(E_{n}^{*}\right) \equiv P\left(\hat{k}_{n} \omega_{n} p^{2 / q} / n<1 / 2\right)=1+o(1) \tag{S3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, together with (S3.34), yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(\hat{k}_{n}>\tilde{k}_{n}, E_{n}, E_{n}^{*}\right) \leq P\left(\frac{3}{2}\left(\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)-\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right)\right) \geq \frac{\left(\hat{k}_{n}-\tilde{k}_{n}\right) \omega_{n} p^{2 / q}}{n} \hat{\sigma}_{\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}}^{2}\right) \tag{S3.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Straightforward calculations imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right)-\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}\left(\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right) \leq 2\left(\hat{k}_{n}-\tilde{k}_{n}\right)\left(\hat{\gamma}_{1 n}+\hat{\gamma}_{2 n}\right) \tag{S3.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\boldsymbol{\gamma}}_{1 n}=\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}\left(\hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right)\right\| \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left(N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} z_{t, j} \varepsilon_{t, h}\right)^{2}$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{\boldsymbol{\gamma}}_{2 n}=\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}\left(\hat{J}_{K_{n}}\right)\right\|\left\{\max _{\sharp(J) \leq \breve{k}_{n}, i \notin J}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\Gamma}}^{-1}(J)\right\|\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right\|\right. \\
& \left.\left\|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) z_{t, i ; J}^{\perp}\right\|+\max _{\sharp(J) \leq \tilde{k}_{n}, i \notin J}\left|N^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{g}_{i}^{\top}(J) \boldsymbol{\Gamma}^{-1}(J) \mathbf{z}_{t}(J) \varepsilon_{t, h}\right|\right\}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By (4.10) and an argument similar to that used to prove Lemma S3.2, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \hat{\gamma}_{1 n}=O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{1}} p^{2 / q}}{n}\right)  \tag{S3.38}\\
& \hat{\gamma}_{2 n}=O_{p}\left(K_{n}^{\theta_{1}}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{1+\theta_{1}+\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{1}+1 / q_{2}}}{n}+\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{2}} p^{1 / q_{2}}}{n^{1 / 2}}\right)^{2}\right)=O_{p}\left(\frac{K_{n}^{\theta_{1}+2 \theta_{2}} p^{2 / q}}{n}\right), \\
& \frac{\left(\hat{k}_{n}-\tilde{k}_{n}\right) \omega_{n} p^{2 / q}}{n} \hat{\sigma}_{\hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}}^{2}=\frac{\left(\hat{k}_{n}-\tilde{k}_{n}\right) \omega_{n} p^{2 / q}}{n}\left(\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{1, h}^{2}\right)+o_{p}(1)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Now, the second identity of (S3.31) follows from (4.12) and (S3.34)(S3.38). This completes the proof of (S3.29).

With the help of (S3.29) and (S3.30), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& P\left(\hat{N}_{h} \neq N_{h}\right) \leq P\left(\hat{N}_{h} \neq N_{h}, \hat{k}_{n}>1, N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right)+P\left(\hat{N}_{h} \neq N_{h}, \hat{k}_{n}=1\right)+P\left(N_{h} \nsubseteq \hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right)  \tag{S3.39}\\
& \leq P\left(\operatorname{HDIC}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}-\left\{\hat{j}_{l}\right\}\right)>\operatorname{HDIC}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \text { and } \beta_{\hat{j}_{l}, h}=0 \text { for some } 1 \leq l \leq \tilde{k}_{n}, \tilde{k}_{n}>1, N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \\
& +P\left(\operatorname{HDIC}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}-\left\{\hat{j}_{l}\right\}\right)<\operatorname{HDIC}\left(\hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \text { and } \beta_{\hat{j}_{l}, h} \neq 0 \text { for some } 1 \leq l \leq \tilde{k}_{n}, \tilde{k}_{n}>1, N_{h} \subseteq \hat{J}_{\tilde{k}_{n}}\right) \\
& +P\left(\hat{k}_{n} \neq \tilde{k}_{n}\right)+P\left(\hat{N}_{h} \neq N_{h}, \hat{k}_{n}=1\right)+P\left(N_{h} \neq \hat{J}_{\hat{k}_{n}}\right) \\
& =(\mathrm{I})+(\mathrm{II})+(\mathrm{III})+(\mathrm{IV})+(\mathrm{V})=(\mathrm{I})+(\mathrm{II})+o(1) .
\end{align*}
$$

In the same way as in the proof of (S3.29), we obtain

$$
(\mathrm{I})=o(1) \text { and }(\mathrm{II})=o(1) .
$$

Combining this with (S3.39) gives the desired conclusion (4.13).
Proof of Theorem 4.3. By an argument similar to that used to prove (3.14), it holds that
$\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)=\operatorname{MI}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)+O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right)+\frac{C_{n}}{n} L_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right)+o_{p}\left(\frac{C_{n}}{n}\right)$.
It follows from Theorem 4.2 that for each $l=1, \ldots, K$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{(l)}=N_{h}^{(l)}\right)=1 \tag{S3.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $l_{1} \in M_{A, h}, l_{2} \in\{1, \ldots, K\}-M_{A, h} \neq \emptyset, l_{3} \in M_{B, h}$, and $l_{4} \in$ $M_{A, h}-M_{B, h} \neq \emptyset$. Then (S3.40) and (S3.41) imply

$$
\begin{align*}
& P\left(\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{1}\right)}\right) \geq \operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{2}\right)}\right)\right) \leq P\left(\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{\left(l_{1}\right)}\right) \geq \operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{\left(l_{2}\right)}\right)\right)  \tag{S3.42}\\
& +P\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{1}\right)} \neq N_{h}^{\left(l_{1}\right)} \text { or } \hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{2}\right)} \neq N_{h}^{\left(l_{2}\right)}\right)=o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& P\left(\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{3}\right)}\right) \geq \operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{4}\right)}\right)\right) \leq P\left(\operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{\left(l_{3}\right)}\right) \geq \operatorname{MRIC}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{\left(l_{4}\right)}\right)\right)  \tag{S3.43}\\
& +P\left(\hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{3}\right)} \neq N_{h}^{\left(l_{3}\right)} \text { or } \hat{N}_{h}^{\left(l_{4}\right)} \neq N_{h}^{\left(l_{4}\right)}\right)=o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

Equations (S3.42) and (S3.43) yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{l}_{h} \in M_{B, h}\right)=1 \tag{S3.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, by (S3.41) and (S3.44), one obtains

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left(\left(\hat{l}_{h}, \hat{N}_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right) \notin M_{C, h}\right) \leq P\left(\left(\hat{l}_{h}, N_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right) \notin M_{C, h}\right)+o(1) \\
\leq & P\left(\left(\hat{l}_{h}, N_{h}^{\left(\hat{l}_{h}\right)}\right) \notin M_{C, h}, \hat{l}_{h} \in M_{B, h}\right)+o(1)=o(1),
\end{aligned}
$$

yielding the desired conclusion (4.24).

## S4. A Nonlinear Extension.

S4.1. A Nonlinear Extension of MRIC and Its Asymptotic Efficiency. In this section, we generalize the results obtained in Sections 2 and 3 of Hsu et al. (2018) to nonlinear cases. Let $\left\{\mathcal{F}_{t}\right\}$ be an increasing sequence of sub- $\sigma$-fields of $\mathcal{F}$. We consider an $h$-step predictive model, $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$, of $y_{t+h}$, where $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is specified up to the parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}=\left(\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{m}\right)^{\top}$ and is $\mathcal{F}_{t}$-measurable for each $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta$, with $\Theta$ denoting a compact parameter space in $R^{m}$. Assume that $V(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \equiv \mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}$ is independent of $t$ and continuous on $\Theta$. Let $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}$ denote the unique minimizer of $V(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ over $\Theta$. On estimating $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}$ by $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}=\arg \min _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta} S_{n}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$, where $S_{n}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=\sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left(y_{t+h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^{N} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$, the following theorem provides an asymptotic expression for $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-g_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)\right)^{2}$, taking a form similar to the right-hand side of (2.4). Define $D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=$ $\left(\partial g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) / \partial \theta_{1} \ldots \partial g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) / \partial \theta_{m}\right)^{\top}$ and $D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=\left(\partial^{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) / \partial \theta_{i} \partial \theta_{j}\right)_{1 \leq i, j \leq m}$.

Theorem S4.1. Suppose that $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuous on $\Theta$ and there is a $\delta>0$ such that $D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuously differentiable on $B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)=$ $\left\{\boldsymbol{\theta}:\left\|\boldsymbol{\theta}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|<\delta\right\} \subset \Theta$, and each component of $D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is differentiable on $B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$. Assume that conditions (E1)-(E7) in Section S4.2 hold. Then, for $h \geq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-g_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)\right)^{2}=V\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)+n^{-1}\left(L_{h}^{*}+o(1)\right), \tag{S4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L_{h}^{*}=\operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}^{*}\right)+2 \sum_{s=1}^{h-1} \operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}\right)$, with $\mathbf{R}^{*}=\mathrm{E}\left\{D_{1} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}, \mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}=\mathrm{E}\left\{D_{1} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{1+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}$, $\mathbf{A}^{*}=\mathrm{E}\left\{D_{2} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}$, and $\mathbf{R}^{*}$ and $\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}$ being nonsingular.

Remark S1. There is a striking resemblance between (S4.1) and (2.4). In particular, (S4.1) reduces to (2.4) when $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is linear in $\boldsymbol{\theta}$. Compared to the $L_{h}$ in (2.4), $L_{h}^{*}$ contains an additional matrix $\mathbf{A}^{*}$ reflecting the joint effect of nonlinearity and model misspecification. This matrix vanishes either when $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is linear in $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ or is correct up to an independent error. See White (1981) for the definition of the latter property. In addition to its indispensable role in model selection, Theorem S4.1 is also of independent interest because it provides the first result revealing that the simple MSPE formula (2.7) obtained in correctly specified AR models carries over (after a mild modification) to misspecified nonlinear regressions with dependent observations in which previous research effort has mainly focused on the asymptotic properties of nonlinear least squares estimates; see, e.g., White (1984). The similarities and dissimilarities between (E1)-(E7) and (C1)-(C6) will be discussed in Section S4.2.

Consider $K$ candidate models $g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta}), l=1, \ldots, K$, for predicting $y_{t+h}$, where $g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is $\mathcal{F}_{t}$-measurable for each $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta_{l}$, with $\Theta_{l}$ denoting a compact parameter space whose dimension may vary with $l$. Assume that for each $1 \leq l \leq K, V_{l}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \equiv \mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}-g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}$ is independent of $t$ and continuous on $\Theta_{l}$. Let $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}$ denote the unique minimizer of $V_{l}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ over $\Theta_{l}$. To estimate $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}$, we use $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}=\arg \min _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta_{l}} S_{n}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$, where $S_{n}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=$ $\sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left(y_{t, h}-g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}$.

Define

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right) \\
\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(D_{2} g_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right), \\
\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}(l)=\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{1+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right),
\end{gathered}
$$

and assume $\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)$ and $\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)-\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)$ are nonsingular. In view of Theorem S4.1, the nonlinear counterparts of $M_{1}$ and $M_{2}$ (defined in Section 3) are given by
$\mathcal{D}_{1}=\left\{k: 1 \leq k \leq K, V_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)=\min _{1 \leq l \leq K} V_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right\}$ and $\mathcal{D}_{2}=\left\{k: L_{h}^{*}(k)=\min _{l \in \mathcal{D}_{1}} L_{h}^{*}(l)\right\}$,
respectively, where
$L_{h}^{*}(l)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)-\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}^{*}(l)\right)+2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{h-1}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)-\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)\right)^{-1} \mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}(l)\right)$.

To find a model whose index falls with $\mathcal{D}_{2}$, we suggest using a nonlinear extension of (3.9),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MRIC}_{h}^{*}(l)=\frac{S_{n}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right)}{N}+\frac{C_{n}}{n} \widehat{L}_{h}^{*}(l) \tag{S4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{n}$ satisfies (3.10) and (3.11),
$\widehat{L}_{h}^{*}(l)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{*}(l)-\widehat{\mathbf{A}}^{*}(l)\right)^{-1} \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}^{*}(l)\right)+2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{s=1}^{h-1}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{*}(l)-\widehat{\mathbf{A}}^{*}(l)\right)^{-1} \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}^{*}(l)\right)$
with

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{*}(l) & =\frac{1}{N} \sum_{t=1}^{N} D_{1} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right), \\
\widehat{\mathbf{A}}^{*}(l) & =\frac{1}{N} \sum_{t=1}^{N} D_{2} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right), \\
\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}^{*}(l) & =\frac{1}{N-s} \sum_{t=1}^{N-s} D_{1} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The next theorem shows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left(\hat{l}_{h}^{*} \in \mathcal{D}_{2}\right)=1 \tag{S4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{l}_{h}^{*}=\arg \min _{1 \leq l \leq K} \operatorname{MRIC}_{h}^{*}(l)$.
Theorem S4.2. Suppose that for each $1 \leq l \leq K, g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuous on $\Theta_{l}$ and there is $\bar{\delta}_{l}>0$ such that $D_{1} g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuously differentiable on $B_{\bar{\delta}_{l}}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \subset \Theta_{l}$ and each component of $D_{2} g_{t, h}^{(l)}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is differentiable on $B_{\bar{\delta}_{l}}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)$. Assume also that conditions (E1)-(E7) in Section S4.2 hold for each candidate model. Then, for $h \geq 1$ and $1 \leq l \leq K$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-g_{n, h}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right)\right)^{2}=V_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)+n^{-1}\left(L_{h}^{*}(l)+o(1)\right) \tag{S4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, assume for each $1 \leq l \leq K$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right)^{2}=V_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)+O_{p}\left(n^{-1 / 2}\right) \tag{S4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} D_{2} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)=\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)+o_{p}(1) \tag{S4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} D_{1} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t+s, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)=\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}(l)+o_{p}(1) \tag{S4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, (S4.3) follows.
Remark S2. Whereas (S4.6) is exclusive to nonlinear regressions, (S4.5) and (S4.7) parallel (3.17) and (3.18) used in the linear case. When $\varepsilon_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)$ and the components of $D_{2} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)$ and $D_{1} g_{t, h}^{(l)}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)$ are linear processes, a discussion about how assumptions like (S4.5)-(S4.7) are verified has been given in Sections 2, 3 and S2. It is worth mentioning that although model selection criteria, such as GAIC, BIC, GBIC and $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$, have been proposed to combat model misspecification under various nonlinear models, none of them has been proven to possess properties like (S4.3) when the FD framework is entertained. Based on the discrepancy between the least squares and weighted least squares estimates when models are misspecified, White (1981) proposed a testing-based approach to conduct model selection for misspecified nonlinear regressions. However, it still seems tricky to justify its asymptotic efficiency within the FD framework.

S4.2. Conditions (E1)-(E7). We start by listing (E1)-(E7) as follows.
(E1) $\mathrm{E}\left\|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right)\right\|^{3}=O(1)$.
(E2) $\mathrm{E}\left\{D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}=\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}$ for all $t$, and

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right)
$$

(E3) There exists $q_{1}>6$ such that for $j=1,2,3$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2 q_{1}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)<\infty, \\
& \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)}\left\|D_{j} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}^{2 q_{1}}\right)<\infty,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $D_{3} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=\left(\partial^{3} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) / \partial \theta_{i} \partial \theta_{j} \partial \theta_{k}\right)_{1 \leq i, j, k \leq m}$ and $\|\mathbf{G}\|_{F}$ denotes the Frobenius norm of the matrix G. Moreover,

$$
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{q_{1}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)<\infty
$$

(E4) $\mathrm{E}\left\|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{3}=O(1)$.
(E5) $\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{3}=O(1)$, and there exists a sequence of positive integers, $\left\{l_{n}\right\}$, with $l_{n} \rightarrow \infty$ and $l_{n}=o\left(n^{1 / 2}\right)$ such that $\mathrm{E} \| \sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\right.$ $\left.\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right) \|^{3}=o(1)$.
(E6)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-k}\right)-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right\|^{3}=o(1), \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty \\
& \sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-k}\right)\right\|^{6}=o(1), \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty
\end{aligned}
$$

(E7)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(D_{2} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{t-k}\right)-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right\|^{3}=o(1), \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty \\
\mathrm{E}\left\|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(D_{2} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)\right\|^{3}=O(1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Some comments are in order. Conditions (E1)-(E4) and (E6) not only look like (C1)-(C4) and (C6), respectively, but also play a similar role in the proof of Theorem S4.1 to the latter conditions in the proof of Theorem 2.1. (E3) imposes a moment bound on the thirdorder derivative of $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$. This type of condition seems quite natural in a rigorous derivation of information criteria under misspecified nonlinear models; see, for example, Lv and Liu (2014). Actually, (E5) and (C5) also parallel each other in their roles in the aforementioned proofs, although they do not take similar forms. To see this, note that (C5), together with ( C 1$)$ and $(\mathrm{C} 4)$, yields $\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}(h)-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{h}\right)\right\|^{q}=O(1)$ and $\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n}(h)-\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{n-l_{n}}(h)\right)\right\|^{q}=o(1)$ for some positive constant $q$, which are linear counterparts of the identities in (E5). On the other hand, we mention that (E5) is a high-level assumption and its justification is nontrivial and of independent interest; see Section S4.4. Condition (E7) can be understood as a 'nonlinear amendment' of (C1)-(C6), which
vanishes automatically when $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is linear. Finally, we remark that Theorems S4.1 and S4.2 remain valid in the so-call 'asymptotic stationary' case, in which $\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}$ may vary with $t$, but converges to $V(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ uniformly over $\Theta$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$. In this case, $\mathbf{R}^{*}, \mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}$ and $\mathbf{A}^{*}$ become

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathrm{E}\left\{D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}, \\
& \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathrm{E}\left\{D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t+s, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}, \\
& \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathrm{E}\left\{D_{2} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

respectively, where all limits are assumed to be finite. We also need to make some minor changes to (E2), (E6) and (E7), namely, deleting the first statement of (E2) and changing the second one to

$$
\mathrm{E}\left(D_{1} g_{k, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{k+n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{k, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{k+n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)=o\left(n^{-1}\right)
$$

for sufficiently large $k$, and replacing the $\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty}$ in (E6) and (E7) by $\sup _{t \geq H_{1}}$, where $H_{1}$ is some large integer.

S4.3. Proofs of Theorems S4.1 and S4.2. Proof of Theorem S4.1. Note first that

$$
\begin{align*}
& n\left\{\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+h}-g_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)\right)^{2}-\mathrm{E}\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}^{2}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}=\mathrm{E}\left\{n\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)-\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)^{2}\right\}  \tag{S4.8}\\
& +2 \mathrm{E}\left\{n\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)-\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\} \equiv \mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I})+2 \mathrm{E}(\mathrm{II}) .
\end{align*}
$$

Let $B_{n}=\left\{\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|<\delta\right.$ and $\left.\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-\ell_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|<\delta\right\}$, and define $\boldsymbol{w}_{n}=$ $D_{1} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$. By Taylor's theorem for multivariable functions, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
(\mathrm{II}) & =-n \boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}-\frac{n}{2}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)^{\top}\left(D_{2} g_{n, h}\left(\breve{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}  \tag{S4.9}\\
& +n\left(\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\hat{\theta}_{n}\right)-\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}^{c}} \equiv(\mathrm{III})+(\mathrm{IV})+(\mathrm{V}),
\end{align*}
$$

where $\left\|\breve{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\| \leq\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|$. We first show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{III})=-\sum_{j=h}^{n-h} \mathrm{E}\left(D_{1}^{\top} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{1} g_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)+o(1) . \tag{S4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\tilde{\mathbf{R}}_{n}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{A}}_{n}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{2} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$. Then, by the mean value theorem for vector-valued functions, we have on $B_{n}$,
$\mathbf{0}=D_{1} S_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)=D_{1} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)+\left\{\int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) d r\right\}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$,
yielding

$$
\begin{align*}
& (\mathrm{III})=-\boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}  \tag{S4.11}\\
& +\boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\left\{\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{R}}_{n}-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right)-\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{A}}_{n}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)\right\} \sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}} \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1}\left[D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)-D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right] d r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}} \\
& \equiv(\mathrm{VI})+(\mathrm{VII})+(\mathrm{VIII}) .
\end{align*}
$$

Define $\mathbf{R}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{1}^{\top} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$ and $\mathbf{A}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}=n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-l_{n}} D_{2} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$. Then, it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& |\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{VII})| \leq\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\| \times \\
& \left\{\mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\boldsymbol{w}_{n}\right\|\left\{\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{R}}_{n}-\mathbf{R}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}\right)\right\|+\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{A}}_{n}-\mathbf{A}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}\right)\right\|\right\}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|\right)\right. \\
+ & \mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\boldsymbol{w}_{n}\right\|\left\{\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\mathbf{R}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right)\right\|+\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\mathbf{A}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)\right\|\right\}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|\right) \\
+ & \left.\mathrm{E}\left[\left\|E\left(\boldsymbol{w}_{n} \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|\left\{\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\mathbf{R}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right)\right\|+\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\mathbf{A}_{n-l_{n}}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)\right\|\right\}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|\right]\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This, (E1), (E3), (E5), (E6), (E7), and Hölder's inequality imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{VII})|=o(1) \tag{S4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We next show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{VIII})|=o(1) \tag{S4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

whose proof is somewhat tricky. Express (VIII) as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{1}{2} \boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)  \tag{S4.14}\\
& -D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) d r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}} \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)-D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) d r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}} \\
& \equiv(\mathrm{IX})+(\mathrm{X}) .
\end{align*}
$$

By making use of

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (1 / 2)\left(D_{3} S_{n}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{i j k}=\sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left\{\left(D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{i j}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{k}+\left(D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{i k}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{j}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{j k}\left(D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{i}\right\}-\sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left(D_{3} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)_{i j k} \varepsilon_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})
\end{aligned}
$$

and Taylor's theorem for multivariable functions, we have for some $C^{*}>0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
|(\mathrm{IX})| \leq & C^{*}\left\|\boldsymbol{w}_{n}\right\|\left(\max _{j \in\{1, \ldots, 3\}} \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left\|D_{j} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|,
\end{aligned}
$$

which, together with Hölder's inequality, Jensen's inequality, (E3) and (E5), yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}|(\mathrm{IX})|=o(1) \tag{S4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assumptions (E3) and (E5) also imply

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}(\mathrm{X})=\mathrm{E}\left\{\frac{1}{2} \boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n-l_{n}}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right.  \tag{S4.16}\\
& \left.-D_{2} S_{n-l_{n}}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) d r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}+o(1) .
\end{align*}
$$

Using (S4.16), (E6) and an argument similar to that used to prove (S4.12) and (S4.15), we obtain $|\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{X})|=o(1)$. In view of this, (S4.14) and (S4.15), (S4.13) follows.

To deal with (VI), note that

$$
\begin{align*}
& (\mathrm{VI})=-\boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \\
& +\boldsymbol{w}_{n}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}^{c}} \equiv(\mathrm{XI})+(\mathrm{XII}) . \tag{S4.17}
\end{align*}
$$

It follows from (E2) that
$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{XI})=-\sum_{j=h}^{n-1} \mathrm{E}\left(D_{1}^{\top} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{1} g_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)$.
Assumptions (E3) and (E5) further yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{XII})|=o(1) \tag{S4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently, (S4.10) is guaranteed by (S4.11)-(S4.13) and (S4.17)(S4.19).

Next, we calculate E(-2(IV)). Straightforward algebraic manipulations yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}(-2(\mathrm{IV}))=\mathrm{E}\left(n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{A}^{*}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}\right)+\mathbf{G}_{n} \tag{S4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\mathbf{G}_{\mathrm{n}}\right| \leq \mathrm{E}\left(n \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)}\left\|D_{3} g_{n, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|^{3}\left|\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right| \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}\right)  \tag{S4.21}\\
& +\mathrm{E}\left\{\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|\left(\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|+\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|\right)\left\|D_{2} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right\|\right\} \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\mathrm{E}\left(D_{2} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{n-l_{n}}\right)-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right\|\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2}\right) \\
& +\mathrm{E}\left(\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2}\left\|D_{2} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right\| \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}^{c}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Let $\xi$ be an arbitrarily small positive number. It is not difficult to see that the first term on the right-hand side of (S4.21) is bounded above by $\delta^{1-\xi} \mathrm{E}\left(n \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)}\left\|D_{3} g_{n, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|^{2+\xi}\left|\varepsilon_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right|\right)$, which in turn converges to 0 in view of (E3) and (E5). Moreover, by (E3), (E5) and (E7), the other three terms on the right-hand side of (S4.21) also vanish asymptotically. As a result,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\mathbf{G}_{\mathrm{n}}\right|=o(1) . \tag{S4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, we get from (E3), (E4), (E5) and some algebraic manipulations that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{E}\left(n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{A}^{*}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}\right) \\
& =\mathrm{E}\left\{n^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) V^{*}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}+o(1),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $V^{*}=\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{A}^{*}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}$. Combining this with (S4.22) and (S4.20) gives
$\mathrm{E}((\mathrm{IV}))=\frac{-1}{2} \mathrm{E}\left\{n^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) V^{*}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}+o(1)$.
It follows from (E3), (E5) and Hölder's inequality that $|\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{V})|=o(1)$. With this result and (S4.9), (S4.10) and (S4.23), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2 \mathrm{E}(\mathrm{II})=-2 \sum_{j=h}^{n-h} \mathrm{E}\left(D_{1}^{\top} g_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} D_{1} g_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{1+j, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)  \tag{S4.24}\\
& -\mathrm{E}\left\{n^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) V^{*}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}+o(1)
\end{align*}
$$

Applying Taylor's theorem for multivariable functions again, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(\mathrm{I}) & =\left[\sqrt{n}\left(D_{1} g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}+\frac{\sqrt{n}}{2}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) D_{2} g_{n, h}\left(\breve{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}}\right. \\
& \left.+\sqrt{n}\left(g_{n, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)-g_{n, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) \mathbf{1}_{B_{n}^{c}}\right]^{2} \equiv[(\mathrm{XIII})+(\mathrm{XIV})+(\mathrm{XV})]^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\left\|\breve{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\| \leq\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|$. An argument similar to that used to prove (S4.24) yields
$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{XIII})^{2}=\mathrm{E}\left\{n^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) Q^{*}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}+o(1)$,
$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{XIV})^{2}=o(1)$,
$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{XV})^{2}=o(1)$,
where $Q^{*}=\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{R}^{*}\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}$, and hence
$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I})=\mathrm{E}\left\{n^{-1}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right) Q^{*}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)\right\}+o(1)$.
Finally, the desired conclusion is ensured by (S4.8), (S4.24), (S4.25) and (E2).

Remark S3. We have obtained a preliminary result, extending Theorem S4.1 to the threshold autoregressive (TAR) model,

$$
y_{t}= \begin{cases}a_{11} y_{t-1}+\cdots+a_{1 p} y_{t-p}+e_{t}=\mathbf{a}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{t-1}+e_{t}, & y_{t-d} \leq r  \tag{S4.26}\\ a_{21} y_{t-1}+\cdots+a_{2 p} y_{t-p}+e_{t}=\mathbf{a}_{2}^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{t-1}+e_{t}, & y_{t-d}>r\end{cases}
$$

where $\mathbf{y}_{t}=\left(y_{t}, \ldots, y_{t-p+1}\right)^{\top}, r$ is an unknown threshold parameter, $1 \leq d \leq p$ is an unknown integer, $\mathbf{a}_{1} \neq \mathbf{a}_{2}$ are unknown $p$-dimensional vectors, and $e_{t}$ are i.i.d. random errors with $\mathrm{E}\left(e_{1}\right)=0$ and $\mathrm{E} e_{1}^{2}=\sigma^{2}$. Note that model (S4.26) is driven by nonlinear dynamics in that it is nonlinear in both parameters and lagged variables. We propose using

$$
\hat{y}_{n+1}= \begin{cases}\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{n}, & y_{n+1-\hat{d}} \leq \hat{r} \\ \hat{\mathbf{a}}_{2}^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{n}, & y_{n+1-\hat{d}}>\hat{r}\end{cases}
$$

to predict $y_{n+1}$, where $\left(\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{1}^{\top}, \hat{\mathbf{a}}_{2}^{\top}, \hat{r}, \hat{d}\right)^{\top}$, modified slightly from the CLSE of Chan (1993), is a consistent estimate of $\left(\mathbf{a}_{1}^{\top}, \mathbf{a}_{2}^{\top}, r, d\right)^{\top}$ and shares the same asymptotic distribution as the latter estimate. Let $\pi(\cdot)$ be the density function of $y_{t}$, and $\left[M_{-}, M_{+}\right)_{\tilde{L}}$ denote the random interval on which the process $\left\{\tilde{L}^{(1)}(-z) I_{(z \leq 0)}+\tilde{L}^{(2)}(z) I_{(z>0)}, z \in R\right\}$ attains its global minimum, where $\left\{\tilde{L}^{(1)}(z), z \geq 0\right\}$ and $\left\{\tilde{L}^{(2)}(z), z \geq 0\right\}$ are
two independent compound Poisson processes, with common rate $\pi(r)$, $\tilde{L}^{(1)}(0)=\tilde{L}^{(2)}(0)=0$ almost surely, and the distributions of jump being given by the conditional distribution of $\left[\left(\mathbf{a}_{1}-\mathbf{a}_{2}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{p}\right]^{2}+2\left(\mathbf{a}_{1}-\right.$ $\left.\mathbf{a}_{2}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{p} e_{p+1}$ given $y_{p+1-d}=r_{-}$and the conditional distribution of $\left[\left(\mathbf{a}_{2}-\right.\right.$ $\left.\left.\mathbf{a}_{1}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{p}\right]^{2}+2\left(\mathbf{a}_{2}-\mathbf{a}_{1}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{p} e_{p+1}$ given $y_{p+1-d}=r_{+}$, respectively. We show that under correct model specification and some regularity conditions,

$$
\begin{align*}
& n\left[\mathrm{E}\left(y_{n+1}-\hat{y}_{n+1}\right)^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right] \\
& =\mathrm{E}\left[\left\{\left(\mathbf{a}_{2}-\mathbf{a}_{1}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{p}\right\}^{2} \mid y_{p+1-d}=r\right] \pi(r) \mathrm{E}\left|M_{-}\right|+2 p \sigma^{2} . \tag{S4.27}
\end{align*}
$$

To the best of our knowledge, (S4.27) is the first result that provides an asymptotic expression for the MSPE of TAR models. Whereas the second term on the right-hand side of (S4.27) is expected in the sense that it is proportional to the number of AR coefficients and contributed by the estimation error of $\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{1}$ and $\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{2}$, the first term appears to be unforeseeable because it is essentially due to the estimation error of $\hat{r}$, whose rate of convergence is much faster than those of $\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{1}$ and $\hat{\mathbf{a}}_{2}$. Owing to the non-differentiability of the TAR model at the true parameter, most conditions described in (E1)-(E7) are violated. Therefore, (S4.27) and (S4.1) of Theorem S4.1 not only don't resemble each other in statement, but also have very different proofs; see Chi et al. (2017).

The above discussion reminds us of the fact that when regularity conditions like those in Section S4.2 fail to hold, a separate investigation on model selection (based on MSPE) needs to be conducted case by case, that is, for each different nonlinear time series. This task, however, is beyond the scope of the current paper.
Proof of Theorem S4.2. Equation (S4.4) is an immediate consequence of Theorem S4.1. Equation (S4.3) is ensured by

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{S_{n}^{(l)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n l}\right)}{N}=V_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)+O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right), \\
& \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, s}^{*}(l)=\mathbf{C}_{h, s}^{*}(l)+o_{p}(1),  \tag{S4.28}\\
& \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{*}(l)=\mathbf{R}^{*}(l)+o_{p}(1), \\
& \widehat{\mathbf{A}}^{*}(l)=\mathbf{A}^{*}(l)+o_{p}(1),
\end{align*}
$$

which follow from (S4.5)-(S4.7) and an argument similar to that used to prove Theorem S4.1.

S4.4. Moment bounds for $\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|$ and $\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|$. Let $q \geq 1$ and $l_{n}=o\left(n^{1 / 2}\right)$. In this section, we provide sufficient conditions under which

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q}=O(1) \tag{S4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)\right\|^{q}=o(1) \tag{S4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $f_{t, h}=\mathrm{E}\left(y_{t+h} \mid \mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$ and $\eta_{t, h}=y_{t+h}-f_{t, h}$. It is easy to show that $\eta_{t, h}$ is uncorrelated with $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ and $V(\boldsymbol{\theta})=V_{o}(\boldsymbol{\theta})+\mathrm{E}\left(\eta_{t, h}^{2}\right)$, where $V_{o}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=\mathrm{E}\left(f_{t, h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}$ is independent of $t$. In view of the continuity of $V(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ on $\Theta$, it is not difficulty to see that $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}=o_{p}(1)$ is ensured by

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}\left|n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right) \eta_{t, h}\right|=o_{p}(1), \\
& \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}\left|n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(f_{t, h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}-V_{o}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right|=o_{p}(1) . \tag{S4.31}
\end{align*}
$$

However, to prove (S4.29) and (S4.30), we need a strengthened version of (S4.31) among other conditions.

Theorem S4.3. Suppose that $g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuous on $\Theta$ and there is $\delta>0$ such that $D_{1} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is continuously differentiable on $B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$ and each component of $D_{2} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ is differentiable on $B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)$. Assume that (E1), (E4) and the second relation of (E7) hold with 3 replaced by $q$,
$\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{3} \mathrm{E}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)}\left\|D_{j} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}^{4 q}\right)+\sup _{-\infty<t<\infty} \mathrm{E}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{4 q}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)<\infty$,
$n^{q / 2} \mathrm{P}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}\left|n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right) \eta_{t, h}\right|>\epsilon\right)=o(1)$,
$n^{q / 2} \mathrm{P}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}\left|n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(f_{t, h}-g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)^{2}-V_{o}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right|>\epsilon\right)=o(1)$, for any $\epsilon>0$,
and there is $\bar{M}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
& n^{q} \mathrm{P}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}(\boldsymbol{\theta})>\bar{M}\right)=O(1),  \tag{S4.34}\\
& n^{q} \mathrm{P}\left(\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n}\left\|D_{j} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}^{2}>\bar{M}\right)=O(1), j=1,2,3 .
\end{align*}
$$

Then, (S4.29) and (S4.30) hold true.
Proof. We begin by proving (S4.29). There is $C^{*}>0$ such that on the set $\left\{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|(2 n)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)-D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) d r\right\|  \tag{S4.35}\\
& \leq C^{*}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\| \Lambda_{n},
\end{align*}
$$

where
$\Lambda_{n}=\max _{j \in\{1, \ldots, 3\}} \sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h}\left\|D_{j} g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right\|_{F}^{2}+\sup _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in B_{\delta}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)} n^{-1} \sum_{t=1}^{n-h} \varepsilon_{t, h}^{2}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$.
Define $Q_{n}=\left\{\Lambda_{n} \leq 2 \bar{M}\right\}$. Let $0<\delta^{*}<\min \left\{\delta,\left(C^{*}\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\| 6 \bar{M}\right)^{-1}\right\}$ and $H_{n}=\left\{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n} \in B_{\delta^{*}}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\}$. Then, it follows from the mean value theorem for vector-valued functions that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}}  \tag{S4.36}\\
& \leq 3^{q}\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\|^{q}\left[\left\|\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=1}^{N} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q}\right. \\
& +\left(\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{R}}_{n}^{*}-\mathbf{R}^{*}\right)\right\|+\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{A}}_{n}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)\right\|\right)^{q}\left\|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}} \\
& \left.+\left\|(2 n)^{-1} \int_{0}^{1} D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}+r\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right)-D_{2} S_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right) d r\right\|^{q}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}}\right] .
\end{align*}
$$

By (S4.35), (S4.36) and the hypotheses associated with (E1), (E4) and (E7), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}} \leq O(1)+3^{q}\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\|^{q}\left(2 \bar{M} C^{*} \delta^{*}\right)^{q}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}}  \tag{S4.37}\\
& +3^{q}\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\|^{q}\left(C^{*}\right)^{q}\left(\delta^{*}\right)^{2 q} \mathrm{E}\left(n^{q / 2} \Lambda_{n}^{q} \mathbf{1}_{Q_{n}}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Note that $3^{q}\left\|\left(\mathbf{R}^{*}-\mathbf{A}^{*}\right)^{-1}\right\|^{q}\left(2 \bar{M} C^{*} \delta^{*}\right)^{q}<1$ and $\mathrm{E}\left(n^{q / 2} \Lambda_{n}^{q} \mathbf{1}_{Q_{n}}\right)=O(1)$ is ensured by (S4.32) and (S4.34). Combining these with (S4.37) gives

$$
\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}}=O(1)
$$

Moreover, it follows from (S4.33), the compactness of $\Theta$ and the continuity of $V(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ that

$$
\mathrm{E}\left\|\sqrt{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}\right)\right\|^{q} \mathbf{1}_{H_{n}^{c}}=O\left(n^{q / 2} \mathrm{P}\left(H_{n}^{c}\right)\right)=o(1) .
$$

This completes the proof of (S4.29). Expressing $D_{1} S_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n}\right)$ as the sum of

$$
\begin{aligned}
& D_{1} S_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)=D_{1} S_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)-D_{1} S_{n-l_{n}}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right) \\
=- & -2 \sum_{t=n-h-l_{n}+1}^{n-h} D_{1} g_{t, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right) \varepsilon_{t, h}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{n-l_{n}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and a remainder term using the mean value theorem for vector-valued functions, we can prove (S4.30) in a fashion similar to the proof of (S4.29). The details are omitted.

Remark S4. Being an extension of Theorem 2.2 of Chan and Ing (2011), Theorem S4.3 establishes the first result on moment convergence of the least squares estimates in misspecified nonlinear regressions with dependent observations. Its applications to prediction and model selection have been illustrated via Theorems S4.1 and S4.2. Note that in the special case of $q=3$, (S4.32) is weaker than condition (E3). (S4.33) is a strengthened version of (S4.31), and the role of (S4.34) in the proof of Theorem S4.3 is similar to that of (2.13) and (2.14) in the proof of Theorem 2.2 of Chan and Ing (2011). When $f_{t, h}, g_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta}), \varepsilon_{t, h}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ and $D_{j} g_{h, t}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ are linear processes and the coefficient functions in the latter three satisfy certain smoothness conditions, (S4.33) and (S4.34) can be justified via an argument similar to that used in Lemma B. 1 of Chan
and Ing (2011), which is a 'uniform version' of the First Moment Bound Theorem of Findley and Wei (1993). It is worth mentioning that while Theorem 2.2 of Chan and Ing (2011) is proved without imposing assumptions on the third-order derivative of the regression function, some extra distributional assumptions like (2.19) on the regression function are needed. Therefore, there exists a trade-off between the smoothness of the regression function and the smoothness of its distribution, which is a subject of further investigation.

S5. Numerical Studies. In this section, the performance of MRIC is illustrated via five simulated examples. The first and second examples focus on linear and nonliner models, respectively, the third and fourth examples address high-dimensional models, and the last one provides a further investigation of Example 2. Throughout this section, the $C_{n}$ in MRIC is set to $n^{\alpha_{m}}$ for some $\alpha_{m}>0.5$.

Example 1. Let the data be generated according to the following DGPs.

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=\beta_{1} z_{t}+\beta_{2} w_{t}+\varepsilon_{t+1}, \tag{S5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $\varepsilon_{t} \sim \operatorname{NID}(0,1), z_{t}=\phi z_{t-1}+\eta_{t}$ is a stationary $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ process, and $w_{t}=\theta_{1} w_{t-1}+\theta_{2} w_{t-2}+\delta_{t}$ is a stationary $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ process, with $\eta_{t} \sim \operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma_{\eta}^{2}\right), \delta_{t} \sim \operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma_{\delta}^{2}\right)$, and $\left\{\eta_{t}\right\},\left\{\delta_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$ independent. Here and hereafter $\operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)$ means normally and independently distributed with mean 0 and variance $\sigma^{2}$. We also let

$$
\sigma_{\eta}^{2}=1-\phi^{2}, \sigma_{\delta}^{2}=1-\theta_{2}^{2}-\left\{\theta_{1}^{2}\left(1+\theta_{2}\right) /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)\right\}
$$

$\beta_{1}=\beta_{2}=1$, and $\phi=\theta_{1} /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)$, noting that (S5.1) leads to $\gamma_{z}(0)=$ $1=\gamma_{w}(0)$, where $\gamma_{z}(j)=\mathrm{E}\left(z_{t} z_{t+j}\right)$ and $\gamma_{w}(j)=\mathrm{E}\left(w_{t} w_{t+j}\right)$. In this study, we consider four different $\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)$ 's: $(0.15,0.5),(-0.10,0.65)$, $(-0.40,-0.60),(0.10,-0.95)$, which are denoted by DGPs I-IV. With observations up to time $n$, we are interested in performing $h$-step prediction, with $h=2$ and 3 , using two candidate models,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
J_{1}: & y_{n+h}=\alpha z_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(1)}, \\
J_{2}: & y_{n+h}=\beta w_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(2)},
\end{array}
$$

which are misspecified. The MI and VI of candidate $J_{l}$ are denoted by $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)$ and $L_{h}(l)$ with $l=1,2$. It is shown in Table S 1 that $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)=$
$\mathrm{MI}_{2}(2)$ in all four DGPs, but $L_{2}(1)<L_{2}(2)$ in DGPs I and II and $L_{2}(1)>L_{2}(2)$ in DGPs III and IV. Therefore, for the two-step prediction, the better predictive model is $J_{1}\left(J_{2}\right)$ under DGP I or II (III or IV). On the other hand, Table S1 reveals that $\mathrm{MI}_{3}(1)>\mathrm{MI}_{3}(2)$ in all DGPs, yielding that the better predictive model is always $J_{2}$ when $h=3$. The percentage of MRIC, with $\alpha_{m}=0.6$, choosing the better candidate is obtained by using 1,000 simulations for sample sizes $n=200,500,1000,2000,3000$; see Table S2 $(h=2)$ and Table S3 $(h=3)$. A data-driven method for choosing $\alpha_{m}$ is suggested in Section S6. For the sake of comparison, the corresponding percentages of AIC, BIC, GAIC (Konishi and Kitagawa, 1996), GBIC (Lv and Liu, 2014) and $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}(\mathrm{Lv}$ and Liu, 2014) are also reported in Tables S2 and S3, where for candidate $J_{l}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{AIC}(l)=\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{2 \sharp\left(J_{l}\right)}{n}, \\
& \operatorname{BIC}(l)=\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{\sharp\left(J_{l}\right) \log n}{n}, \\
& \operatorname{GAIC}(l)=\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{2 \operatorname{tr}\left(\widehat{H}_{h}(l)\right)}{n}, \\
& \operatorname{GBIC}(l)=\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{\sharp\left(J_{l}\right) \log n}{n}-\frac{\log \operatorname{det}\left(\widehat{H}_{h}(l)\right)}{n}, \\
& \operatorname{GBIC}_{p}(l)=\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{\sharp\left(J_{l}\right) \log n}{n}+\frac{\operatorname{tr}\left(\widehat{H}_{h}(l)\right)}{n}-\frac{\log \operatorname{det}\left(\widehat{H}_{h}(l)\right)}{n},
\end{aligned}
$$

with

$$
\widehat{H}_{h}(l)=\hat{\sigma}_{h}^{-2}(l) \widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}(l),
$$

which is a consistent estimator of $\sigma_{h}^{-2}(l) \mathbf{R}^{-1}(l) \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}(l)$. Note first that $\operatorname{MRIC}(l)$ is asymptotically equivalent to

$$
\log \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{2}(l)+\frac{C_{n} \hat{\sigma}_{h}^{-2}(l) \hat{L}_{h}(l)}{n}
$$

which shares a common first term with these five criteria. On the other hand, by featuring a consistent estimator of VI, $\hat{L}_{h}(l)$, and a suitable penalty term, $C_{n}$, the second term of MRIC readily paves the way for a consistent selection of the better predictive model, whether the MIs of candidate models are equal or not. We also mention that this latter property is, in general, not enjoyed by these five criteria because (i)

Table S1
The values of $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(1)-\mathrm{MI}_{h}(2)$ and $L_{h}(1)-L_{h}(2)$ in Example 1, and the corresponding better predictive models

|  | DGP |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | I | II | III | IV |
|  | $h=2$ |  |  |  |
| $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(1)-\mathrm{MI}_{h}(2)$ | 0.000 | 0.000 | 0.000 | 0.000 |
| $L_{h}(1)-L_{h}(2)$ | -0.746 | -0.999 | 0.984 | 1.890 |
| The better predictive model | $J_{1}$ | $J_{1}$ | $J_{2}$ | $J_{2}$ |
|  | $h=3$ |  |  |  |
| $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(1)-\mathrm{MI}_{h}(2)$ | 0.289 | 0.454 | 0.246 | 0.893 |
| $L_{h}(1)-L_{h}(2)$ | * | * | * | * |
| The better predictive model | $J_{2}$ | $J_{2}$ | $J_{2}$ | $J_{2}$ |

the trace of $\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{-1}(l) \widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}(l)$ in $\widehat{H}_{h}(l)$ is a consistent estimator of VI only when $h=1$ or observations are independent over time, and (ii) the penalty term $\log n$ used in $\mathrm{BIC}, \mathrm{GBIC}$ and $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ is too weak when misspecified candidates are non-nested (see Sin and White (1996) and Inoue and Kilian (2006) for related discussion). In fact, the criterion values of GAIC (AIC, BIC, GBIC, $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ ) for $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ are expected to be close to each other because $\mathrm{MI}_{h}(1)=\operatorname{MI}_{h}(2), \sharp\left(J_{1}\right)=\sharp\left(J_{2}\right)$ and $\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{R}^{-1}(l) \mathbf{C}_{h, 0}(l)\right)=\sharp\left(J_{l}\right) \mathrm{MI}_{h}(l)$ (under normality). As shown in Table S2, these five criteria behave like a fair coin to choose between two alternatives, and can only select the better candidate about $50 \%$ of the time. In contrast, MRIC has a much higher chance of identifying the better model in this difficult situation. Its percentage falls between $67 \%$ and $100 \%$, and tends to increase with the sample size and the value of $\left|L_{2}(1)-L_{2}(2)\right|$.

When $h=3$, the two competing candidates have different MIs, and hence it becomes much easier to identify the better one. As shown in Table S3, all criteria perform satisfactorily for all sample sizes $n \geq 200$. While in DGPs I and III, MRIC seems slightly worse than the other criteria for $n=200$, the corresponding percentages are still over $93 \%$.

Example 2. In this example, we consider the following DGP,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+2}=\frac{1}{1-a B} x_{t}+\frac{1}{1-b B} z_{t}+\varepsilon_{t+2} \tag{S5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $|a|<1,|b|<1, \varepsilon_{t} \sim \operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right), x_{t} \sim \operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma_{x}^{2}\right), z_{t} \sim$ $\operatorname{NID}\left(0, \sigma_{z}^{2}\right)$, and $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\},\left\{x_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{z_{t}\right\}$ are independent. Note that model

Table S2
Percentage of times, across 1,000 simulations, that the better predictive model between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ of Example 1 is chosen in the case of $h=2$

| $n$ |  | DGPs |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | Criteria | I | II | III | IV |
|  | AIC/BIC | 51.50 | 54.50 | 48.50 | 46.30 |
|  | GAIC | 51.40 | 54.30 | 49.00 | 46.70 |
|  | GBIC | 51.60 | 54.40 | 48.50 | 45.40 |
|  | GBICp | 51.60 | 54.40 | 48.40 | 46.00 |
|  | MRIC | 66.80 | 73.20 | 76.70 | 95.80 |
| 500 | AIC/BIC | 51.10 | 50.70 | 47.60 | 49.00 |
|  | GAIC | 50.80 | 50.50 | 47.30 | 50.90 |
|  | GBIC | 51.10 | 50.50 | 47.60 | 47.30 |
|  | GBICp | 51.10 | 50.70 | 47.60 | 49.10 |
|  | MRIC | 69.80 | 74.20 | 85.30 | 99.70 |
| 1000 | AIC/BIC | 48.10 | 53.60 | 53.00 | 49.40 |
|  | GAIC | 48.00 | 53.00 | 52.40 | 50.00 |
|  | GBIC | 48.10 | 53.50 | 52.80 | 49.20 |
|  | GBICp | 48.10 | 53.50 | 53.00 | 49.40 |
|  | MRIC | 74.90 | 80.80 | 88.70 | 100.00 |
| 2000 | AIC/BIC | 50.10 | 49.70 | 50.80 | 49.60 |
|  | GAIC | 50.10 | 49.50 | 50.90 | 49.20 |
|  | GBIC | 50.30 | 49.70 | 50.90 | 49.30 |
|  | GBICp | 50.10 | 49.70 | 50.80 | 49.60 |
|  | MRIC | 78.20 | 83.90 | 92.20 | 100.00 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 51.40 | 51.20 | 49.00 | 50.40 |
|  | GAIC | 51.40 | 51.10 | 48.90 | 50.60 |
| 3000 | GBIC | 51.30 | 51.20 | 49.00 | 50.70 |
|  | GBICp | 51.40 | 51.20 | 49.00 | 50.40 |
|  | MRIC | 79.80 | 84.90 | 93.40 | 100.00 |

Table S3
Percentage of times, across 1,000 simulations, that the better predictive model between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ of Example 1 is chosen in the case of $h=3$

|  |  | DGPs |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $n$ | Criteria | I | II | III | IV |
| 200 | AIC/BIC | 99.30 | 100.00 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
|  | GAIC | 99.30 | 100.00 | 99.10 | 100.00 |
|  | GBIC | 99.30 | 100.00 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
|  | GBICp | 99.20 | 100.00 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
|  | MRIC | 93.20 | 97.90 | 94.70 | 100.00 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
| 500 | GBIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | MRIC | 99.90 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
| 1000 | GBIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | AIC $/$ BIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
| 2000 | GBIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
| 3000 | GBIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |

(S5.2) is nonlinear in the parameters. With observations up to time $n$, we are interested in predicting $y_{n+2}$ using a model chosen from

$$
\begin{aligned}
J_{1}: & y_{n+2}=\frac{1}{1-\alpha B} x_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(1)}(\alpha) \equiv g_{n, 2}^{(1)}(\alpha)+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(1)}(\alpha), \\
J_{2}: & y_{n+2}=\frac{1}{1-\beta B} z_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(2)}(\beta) \equiv g_{n, 2}^{(2)}(\beta)+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(2)}(\beta),
\end{aligned}
$$

both being misspecified. Since $g_{n, 2}^{(1)}(\alpha)$ is independent of $\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(1)}(\alpha)$ and $g_{n, 2}^{(2)}(\beta)$ is independent of $\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(2)}(\beta), J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ are said to be correct up to an independent additive error. In addition, since the initial conditions are set to $x_{t}=z_{t}=0$ for $t<0$, this example is classified as an asymptotic stationary case discussed at the end of Section S4.2. The parameters in (S5.2) are set to:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { DGP I: }\left(a, b, \sigma_{\varepsilon}, \sigma_{x}, \sigma_{z}\right)=(0.5, \mathrm{NA}, 1,1,1) \text {, } \\
& \text { DGP II: }\left(a, b, \sigma_{\varepsilon}, \sigma_{x}, \sigma_{z}\right)=(0.95,0.65,1,0.4109,1.000) \text {, } \\
& \text { DGP III: }\left(a, b, \sigma_{\varepsilon}, \sigma_{x}, \sigma_{z}\right)=(0.4,-0.95,0.25,1.4676,0.5) \text {, } \\
& \text { DGP IV: }\left(a, b, \sigma_{\varepsilon}, \sigma_{x}, \sigma_{z}\right)=(0.8,-0.4,1,1.3093,2)
\end{aligned}
$$

In DGP I, $b=$ NA represents that the true model depends on $\left\{x_{t}\right\}$ only. Let $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(l)$ and $L_{2}(l)$ denote the MI and VI of $J_{l}, l=1,2$. It is shown in Table S 4 that while $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)<\mathrm{MI}_{2}(2)$ under DGP I, the two candidates have the same MI for other DGPs, which is caused by $\sigma_{x}^{2} /\left(1-a^{2}\right)=\sigma_{z}^{2} /\left(1-b^{2}\right)$. Moreover, $L_{2}(1)<L_{2}(2)$ for DGPs II and III, but the opposite holds true for DGP IV. Consequently, $J_{2}$ is better than $J_{1}$ only under DGP IV. In Table S5, we present the performances, based on 1,000 simulations, of MRIC (with $\alpha_{m}=0.8$ ) and the other five criteria described in Example 1. It is worth mentioning that since $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ are correct up to an independent additive error, the $\widehat{\mathbf{A}}^{*}(l)$ in the nonlinear version of MRIC defined in (S4.2) can be dropped from the formula. In addition, the $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{h}(l)$ in $\operatorname{GAIC}(l), \operatorname{GBIC}(l)$ and $\operatorname{GBIC}_{p}(l)$ is defined as in Example 1, except that $\widehat{\mathbf{R}}(l)$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}(l)$ are replaced by $\widehat{\mathbf{R}}^{*}(l)$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{C}}_{h, 0}^{*}(l)$, respectively. The sample size $n$ is again set to $200,500,1000,2000$ and 3000 . Note first that since under DGP I, $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ have a substantial difference in MI, all six criteria work well for all sample sizes. However, the performance of these criteria notably deteriorates under DGPs II-IV, in which $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ have the same MI. In particular, all criteria, except for MRIC, can only select the better candidate between $42 \%$ and $58 \%$ of the time when $n \geq 500$, and the

Table S4
The values of $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)-\mathrm{MI}_{2}(2)$ and $L_{2}(1)-L_{2}(2)$ in Example 2, and the corresponding better predictive models

|  | DGPs |  |  |  |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | I | II | III | IV |
| $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)-\mathrm{MI}_{2}(2)$ | -2.333 | 0.000 | 0.000 | 0.000 |
| $L_{2}(1)-L_{2}(2)$ | $*$ | -0.759 | -1.311 | 1.538 |
| The better predictive model | $J_{1}$ | $J_{1}$ | $J_{1}$ | $J_{2}$ |
| ${ }^{*}: L_{2}(1)-L_{2}(2)$ can be neglected. |  |  |  |  |

percentage seems to be indifferent to the sample size. On the other hand, MRIC tends to perform better with increasing number of data points. More specifically, under DGP II (III, IV), MRIC's percentage of identifying the better candidate increases from $46 \%(74 \%, 66 \%)$ to $64 \% ~(84 \%, 83 \%)$ as $n$ rises from 200 to 3000 . The $\alpha_{m}$ in MRIC is set to 0.8 instead of 0.6. This is because in the nonlinear case, a larger $\alpha_{m}$ is usually needed to secure a better selection result. For a further investigation on this example, see Example 5.

Example 3. In this example, we evaluate the performance of the high-dimensional model selection method, OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim, developed in Section 4 using the following one-step predictive model,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=\mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\beta}+x_{t, p+1}+\varepsilon_{t+1} . \tag{S5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t}=\left(x_{t 1}, \ldots, x_{t p}\right)^{\top}\right\}$ is a sequence of $p$-dimensional i.i.d. standard normal random variates, $p$ is allowed to be larger than $n, x_{t, p+1}=$ $x_{t 1} x_{t 2}$ is the product of the first two regressor variables, $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ is a $p$ dimensional regression coefficient vector, and $\varepsilon_{t}=\phi_{1} \varepsilon_{t-1}+\eta_{t}$ is an $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ process in which $\left|\phi_{1}\right|<1$ and $\left\{\eta_{t}\right\}$, independent of $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t}\right\}$, is a sequence i.i.d. random errors with mean 0 . Although the data are generated from model (S5.3), we fit a linear regression model without the interaction term $x_{t, p+1}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{t+1}=\mathbf{x}_{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\beta}^{*}+\varepsilon_{t+1}^{*} \tag{S5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is misspecified in view of (S5.3). In the special case that $\phi_{1}=0$ and $4 \eta_{t}$ is $N(0,1)$ distributed, $(\mathrm{S} 5.3)$ and (S5.4) have been used in Example 5.1.2 of Lv and Liu (2014) to illustrate the advantage of $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ with respect to AIC, BIC, GAIC and GBIC when $p \geq n$. Following Lv and Liu (2014), we let $\boldsymbol{\beta}=\left(1,-1.25,0.75,-0.95,1.5, \mathbf{0}_{p-5}^{\top}\right)^{\top}$. On the other hand, to demonstrate the broad range of application of

Table S5
Percentage of times, across 1,000 simulations, that the better two-step $(h=2)$ predictive model between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$ of Example 2 is chosen

| $n$ |  | DGPs |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
|  | Criteria | I | II | III | IV |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 39.40 | 60.20 | 52.50 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 39.30 | 60.80 | 52.80 |
|  | GBIC | 100.00 | 39.20 | 60.30 | 51.90 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 39.30 | 60.50 | 51.90 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 46.20 | 73.50 | 65.90 |
| 500 | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 42.20 | 58.00 | 53.10 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 42.50 | 58.30 | 53.60 |
|  | GBIC | 100.00 | 42.10 | 58.20 | 52.80 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 42.20 | 58.40 | 52.90 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 51.70 | 75.10 | 72.90 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 45.70 | 52.00 | 53.10 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 46.10 | 52.30 | 53.50 |
|  | GBIC | 100.00 | 45.70 | 52.00 | 52.20 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 45.80 | 52.20 | 52.40 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 56.10 | 76.70 | 78.60 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 48.50 | 54.50 | 51.90 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 48.60 | 54.60 | 52.20 |
| 2000 | GBIC | 100.00 | 48.50 | 54.50 | 51.50 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 48.60 | 54.60 | 51.50 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 61.90 | 81.50 | 81.20 |
|  | AIC/BIC | 100.00 | 48.10 | 54.70 | 50.70 |
|  | GAIC | 100.00 | 48.20 | 54.80 | 50.90 |
| 3000 | GBIC | 100.00 | 48.10 | 54.70 | 50.70 |
|  | GBICp | 100.00 | 48.10 | 54.80 | 50.70 |
|  | MRIC | 100.00 | 63.90 | 83.50 | 82.60 |

$\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim, we set $\phi_{1}=0.8$ and let $4 \eta_{t}$ follow a t-distribution with 8 degrees of freedom (denoted as $t_{8}$ ) in addition to the $N(0,1)$ distribution. Moreover, the ( $n, p$ ) combinations considered in this example are $\{200,1000\} \times\{100,200,1000\}$, which include both the lowdimensional case ( $p \leq n$ ) and the high-dimensional case ( $p>n$ ).

Due to $\min \left\{q_{1}, q_{2}\right\}<8$ in the case of $4 \eta_{t} \sim t_{8}$ (noting that $q_{1}$ and $q_{2}$ are defined in (F1) and (F2) of Section 4, respectively), $2 / q$ in $\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}$ is set to 0.3 (denoted by $\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)$ ) or 0.4 (denoted by $\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}(0.4)$ ) in our simulation study. In addition, we let $\omega_{n}=\log n$ and $K_{n}$, the maximum number of the OGA iterations, equal $\min \left\{p, \bar{m}_{n}\right\}$, where $\bar{m}_{n}=5 n^{1 / 2} / p^{1 / 4}$. (Note that our (unreported) simulation studies indicate that varying 5 in $\bar{m}_{n}$ from 3 to 10 leads to similar conclusions.) Since in this example $\theta_{1}=\theta_{2}=0$, where $\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}$ are defined in (F5) of Section 4, it is not difficult to see that the above specifications on OGA and $\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}$ fulfill (4.11) and (4.12), which are required to establish the selection consistency of OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim; see Theorem 4.2. A data-driven method for determining $2 / q$ is provided in Section S6.

For the purpose of comparison, we also evaluate the performance of $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$, AIC, BIC, GAIC and GBIC in the same simulation setting. Since it is unrealistic to implement best subset regression due to $p \geq$ 100 , these five criteria are used to select models along the OGA path, which can substantially relieve computational burden. Note that Theorem 4.1 ensures that OGA can asymptotically include $J^{*}=\{1, \ldots, 5\}$, the most parsimonious model among those having the lowest MI value.

We evaluate the performance of a model selection criterion (which selects variable set $\hat{J}^{(i)} \subset\{1, \ldots, p\}$ in the $i$ th simulation) using three different measures,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { expected number of true positives (ENTP) : } \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{i=1}^{1000} \sharp\left(\hat{J}^{(i)} \bigcap J^{*}\right) \text {, } \\
& \text { expected number of false positives (ENFP) : } \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{i=1}^{1000} \sharp\left(\hat{J}^{(i)} \bigcap J^{*^{c}}\right) \text {, } \\
& \text { selection probability (SP) : } \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{1000} I_{\left\{\hat{J}^{(i)}=J^{*}\right\}}}{1000},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $J^{*^{c}}=\{1, \ldots, p\}-J^{*}$. We summarize in Table $S 6$ the performance of the seven criteria mentioned in previous paragraphs in Table S6. As observed, all criteria have ENTP values equal to $5=\sharp\left(J^{*}\right)$,
except for the case of $(n, p)=(200,1000)$ in which the ENTP values of $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.4)+$ Trim fall between 4.998 and 4.999. This result not only suggests that OGA is a very powerful tool for including relevant variables in finite samples, but also reveals that all criteria, in conjunction with OGA, enjoy high true positive rates. In addition, all ENFP and SP values of $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(r)+$ Trim, with $r=0.3$ and 0.4 , are close to 0 and 1, respectively. These findings indicate that the model selection method proposed in Section 4 is not only reliable in both lowand high-dimensional cases, but also robust to the tail behavior of the error distribution. On the other hand, while the overfitting problem associated with OGA+BIC-type criteria (OGA+BIC, OGA+GBIC and $\mathrm{OGA}^{\left(\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}\right) \text { is not severe in terms of ENFP when } p \leq 200 \text {, their SP }}$ values are substantially smaller than 1 . Moreover, suffering from considerable overfitting, OGA+BIC-type criteria in the case of $p=1000$ and OGA+AIC-type criteria (OGA+AIC and OGA+GAIC) in all cases have SP values very close to 0 .

Example 4. In this example, we demonstrate the performance of OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim + MRIC under high-dimensional misspecified models. We first generate $\left(y_{i}, z_{i}, w_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n$, according to model (S5.1), with $\beta_{1}=\beta_{2}=6,\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)=(0.8,-0.95), \phi=\theta_{1} /\left(1-\theta_{2}\right)$, and $\varepsilon_{t}$ being i.i.d. random variables from a $t_{8}$ distribution. Suppose that there are two forecasters, F1 and F2, who are interested in predicting $y_{n+h}$, with $h=2,3$, using the following high-dimensional models,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { F1: } & y_{n+h}=\sum_{j=1}^{p_{1}} \beta_{j, h}^{(1)} x_{n, j}^{(1)}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(1)}=\beta_{1, h}^{(1)} x_{n, 1}^{(1)}+\mathbf{x}_{t,-1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\beta}_{-1}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(1)}, \\
\text { F2 : } & y_{n+h}=\sum_{j=1}^{p_{2}} \beta_{j, h}^{(2)} x_{n, j}^{(2)}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(2)}=\beta_{1, h}^{(2)} x_{n, 1}^{(2)}+\mathbf{x}_{t,-2}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\beta}_{-2}+\varepsilon_{n, h}^{(2)},
\end{array}
$$

where $p_{1}>n, p_{2}>n, x_{t, 1}^{(1)}=z_{t}, x_{t, 1}^{(2)}=w_{t}, \mathbf{x}_{t,-l} \sim \mathrm{~N}\left(\mathbf{0}, 0.25 \mathrm{I}_{p_{l}-1}\right), l=$ 1,2 , and $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t,-1}\right\},\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t,-2}\right\},\left\{z_{t}\right\},\left\{w_{t}\right\}$, and $\left\{\varepsilon_{t}\right\}$ are independent. Recall the definitions of $N_{h}^{(l)}, \operatorname{MI}_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right), L_{h, l}\left(N_{h}^{(l)}\right), M_{A, h}, M_{B, h}$, and $M_{C, h}$ given in Section 4. Since $\left\{\mathbf{x}_{t,-l}, l=1,2\right\}$, are independent of $\left\{z_{t}, w_{t}, \varepsilon_{t}\right\}$, it is easy to see that for $h=2$ and $3, N_{h}^{(1)}=\{1\}$ and $N_{h}^{(2)}=\{1\}$. Straightforward calculations give $\mathrm{MI}_{2,1}\left(N_{2}^{(1)}\right)=\mathrm{MI}_{2,2}\left(N_{2}^{(2)}\right)$ and $L_{2,1}\left(N_{2}^{(1)}\right)-L_{2,2}\left(N_{2}^{(2)}\right)=37.8$, yielding $M_{A, 2}=\{1,2\}, M_{B, 2}=\{2\}$,

Table S6
Expected numbers of true positives (ENTP), expected numbers of false positives (ENFP), and selection probabilities (SP), across 1,000 simulations, of the model selection criteria in Example 3 under the misspecified model (S5.4)


Note: all values are rounded off to the nearest thousandths.

Table S7
Percentage of times, across 1,000 simulations, that $M_{C, h}$ in Example 4 is chosen

| Criteria | $h=2$ |  | $h=3$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $n=200$ | $n=500$ | $n=200$ | $n=500$ |
| $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim +AIC | 47.90 | 48.40 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
| $\mathrm{OGA}^{+} \mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim +BIC | 47.90 | 48.40 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
| $\mathrm{OGA}^{+} \mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim +GAIC | 48.30 | 48.40 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
| $\mathrm{OGA}^{+} \mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim +GBIC | 47.60 | 48.20 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
| $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim $+\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ | 47.80 | 48.40 | 99.30 | 100.00 |
| $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(0.3)+$ Trim +MRIC | 66.60 | 76.60 | 98.50 | 100.00 |

and $M_{C, 2}=\left\{\left(2, N_{2}^{(2)}\right)\right\}$. Moreover, $\mathrm{MI}_{3,1}\left(N_{3}^{(1)}\right)-\mathrm{MI}_{3,2}\left(N_{3}^{(2)}\right)=12.899$, implying $M_{A, 3}=\{2\}, M_{B, 3}=\{2\}$, and $M_{C, 3}=\left\{\left(2, N_{3}^{(2)}\right)\right\}$. In other words, the subset of model F2, which contains one variable $x_{n, 1}^{(2)}$ only, is the asymptotically best model for predicting $y_{n+2}$ and $y_{n+3}$. In Table S 7 , the percentage of OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim +MRIC choosing $M_{C, h}$, with $h=2,3$, is reported by using 1,000 simulations for $n=200,500$ and $p_{1}=p_{2}=p=1001$. In view of Example 3, the tuning parameters in OGA and $\operatorname{HDIC}_{h, l}$ are given by $K_{n}^{(l)}=\min \left\{p, 5 n^{1 / 2} / p^{1 / 4}\right\}$, $\omega_{n}^{(l)}=\log n$, and $2 / q_{l}=0.3$ for $l=1,2$. Following Example 1, the $\alpha_{m}$ in $\mathrm{MRIC}_{h, l}$ is set to 0.6 for $l=1,2$. We also evaluate the performance of $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h, l}+$ Trim +AIC (BIC, GAIC, GBIC, or $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ ) in choosing $M_{C, h}$, with $h=2,3$, and record the results in Table S7. As shown in the table, all criteria perform satisfactorily in the case of $h=3$ even when $n=200$. This is not only because OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{3, l}+$ Trim can consistently select $N_{3}^{(l)}, l=1,2$, but because the notable difference between $\mathrm{MI}_{3,1}\left(N_{3}^{(1)}\right)$ and $\mathrm{MI}_{3,2}\left(N_{3}^{(2)}\right)$ makes all criteria easy to identify the better predictive model. On the other hand, while in the case of $h=2$, the percentage of $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{2, l}+$ Trim selecting $N_{2}^{(l)}, l=1,2$, is still very high, all criteria except for OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{2, l}+$ Trim +MRIC have only about a $50 \%$ chance of choosing $M_{C, 2}$ due to $\mathrm{MI}_{2,1}\left(N_{2}^{(1)}\right)=\mathrm{MI}_{2,2}\left(N_{2}^{(2)}\right)$ and $\sharp\left(N_{2}^{(1)}\right)=\sharp\left(N_{2}^{(2)}\right)=1$. In contrast, OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{2, l}+$ Trim + MRIC has a $66 \%$ percent chance of choosing $M_{C, 2}$ when $n=200$, and the percentage grows to $76 \%$ when $n$ increases to 500 .

Example 5. Suppose that data are generated from model (S5.2) and the candidate models used for predicting $y_{n+2}$ are $J_{1}$ and

$$
J_{2}^{\prime}: \quad y_{n+2}=\frac{r_{2}}{1-\beta B} z_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(2)}\left(r_{2}, \beta\right) .
$$

Unlike $J_{2}$ in Example 2, $J_{2}^{\prime}$ does not assume that prior information about $r_{2}$ is available, and hence the parameter needs to be estimated
from the data. It can be show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)=\sigma_{z}^{2} /\left(1-b^{2}\right)+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \text { and } \mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(2)=\sigma_{x}^{2} /\left(1-a^{2}\right)+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}=\mathrm{MI}_{2}(2) \tag{S5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(2)$ is the MI for $J_{2}^{\prime}$. Moreover, we have

$$
L_{2}(1)=\frac{\sigma_{z}^{2}}{1-b^{2}}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\frac{4 a b \sigma_{z}^{2}}{\left(1+a^{2}\right)\left(1-b^{2}\right)}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{2}^{*}(2)=2\left(\frac{\sigma_{x}^{2}}{1-a^{2}}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+\frac{4 a b \sigma_{x}^{2}}{1-a^{2}} \tag{S5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, when $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)=\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(2)$ (i.e., $\left.\sigma_{z}^{2} /\left(1-b^{2}\right)=\sigma_{x}^{2} /\left(1-a^{2}\right)\right), L_{2}(1)$ is always smaller than $L_{2}^{*}(2)$. This is in sharp contrast to the situation described in Example 2, where $L_{2}(1)$ can sometimes be greater than

$$
L_{2}(2)=\frac{\sigma_{x}^{2}}{1-a^{2}}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}+\frac{4 a b \sigma_{x}^{2}}{\left(1+b^{2}\right)\left(1-a^{2}\right)}
$$

under $\sigma_{z}^{2} /\left(1-b^{2}\right)=\sigma_{x}^{2} /\left(1-a^{2}\right)$.
On the other hand, if $J_{1}$ is replaced by

$$
J_{1}^{\prime}: \quad y_{n+2}=\frac{r_{1}}{1-\alpha B} x_{n}+\varepsilon_{n, 2}^{(1)}\left(r_{1}, \alpha\right),
$$

where both $r_{1}$ and $\alpha$ are unknown, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MI}_{2}^{*}(1)=\sigma_{z}^{2} /\left(1-b^{2}\right)+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2} \tag{S5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{2}^{*}(1)=2\left(\frac{\sigma_{z}^{2}}{1-b^{2}}+\sigma_{\varepsilon}^{2}\right)+\frac{4 a b \sigma_{z}^{2}}{1-b^{2}}, \tag{S5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(1)$ and $L_{2}^{*}(1)$ are the MI and VI for $J_{1}^{\prime}$. In view of (S5.5)(S5.8), $J_{1}^{\prime}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ share the same VI value, provided their MI values are the same.

In Table S8, we present the performances, based on 1,000 simulations, of the six criteria described in Example 2 when they are used to choose between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ and between $J_{1}^{\prime}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ under

DGP V: $\left(\mathrm{a}, \mathrm{b}, \sigma_{\varepsilon}, \sigma_{x}, \sigma_{z}\right)=(-0.2,0.7,0.25,1.372,1)$,
yielding $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)=\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(1)=\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(2)=2.0233, L_{2}(1)-L_{2}^{*}(2)=-1.9811$, and $L_{2}^{*}(1)-L_{2}^{*}(2)=0$. It is shown in the upper panel of Table S8 that MRIC can successfully identify the better model, $J_{1}$, between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$, and its finite sample performance under DGP V is even better than under DGPs III and IV. On the other hand, all other criteria do not possess this advantage due to $\mathrm{MI}_{2}(1)=\mathrm{MI}_{2}^{*}(2)$. The lower panel of Table S8 reveals that all six criteria tend to randomly choose between $J_{1}^{\prime}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$. This result, however, should not be an overriding concern because $J_{1}^{\prime}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ are indistinguishable in terms of both MI and VI.

Table S8
Percentage of times, across 1,000 simulations, that the better two-step $(h=2)$ predictive model between $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ (or between $J_{1}^{\prime}$ and $J_{2}^{\prime}$ ) is chosen under DGP V in Example 5

|  |  | $J_{1}$ vs. $J_{2}^{\prime}$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $h$ | $n$ | AIC | BIC | GAIC | GBIC | GBICp | MRIC |
| 2 | 200 | 52.20 | 55.60 | 52.20 | 55.60 | 56.90 | 89.80 |
| 2 | 500 | 52.90 | 55.30 | 53.00 | 55.40 | 55.70 | 95.10 |
| 2 | 1000 | 48.80 | 50.50 | 48.70 | 50.50 | 51.00 | 98.60 |
| 2 | 2000 | 50.80 | 52.90 | 50.70 | 52.90 | 53.10 | 99.60 |
| 2 | 3000 | 49.70 | 51.30 | 49.70 | 51.30 | 51.80 | 99.90 |
|  |  | $J_{1}^{\prime}$ |  |  |  |  |  |
| $h$ | $n$ | AIC. $J_{2}^{\prime}$ | BIC | GAIC | GBIC | GBICp | MRIC |
| 2 | 200 | 52.40 | 52.40 | 52.50 | 52.50 | 52.40 | 51.90 |
| 2 | 500 | 51.40 | 51.40 | 51.60 | 51.50 | 51.40 | 50.50 |
| 2 | 1000 | 49.30 | 49.30 | 49.30 | 49.30 | 49.30 | 49.10 |
| 2 | 2000 | 50.50 | 50.50 | 50.50 | 50.50 | 50.50 | 50.60 |
| 2 | 3000 | 49.20 | 49.20 | 49.20 | 49.20 | 49.20 | 49.50 |

S6. Real Data Analysis: Two Cases. In this section, we compare the performance of the criteria discussed in Section S5 using two real datasets. The first dataset is the monthly life insurance data recording the net number of new personal life insurances for a large insurance company from January 1964 to December 1980; see Claeskens et al. (2007) for more details. Following Claeskens et al. (2007), we took the first and the seasonal differences of the log-transformed data to get a (possibly) stationary series; see Figure S1 for the time plot as well as the sample ACF/PACF plot of the resultant series, denoted by $\left\{S_{t}\right\}, 1 \leq t \leq 191$. The goal of this study is to investigate the prediction performance of the criteria considered in Example 1 of Section S5 when they are applied to $\left\{S_{t}\right\}$. For the sake of completeness, our assessment also includes FIC (Claeskens et al., 2007), whose performance on $\left\{S_{t}\right\}$ has been explored in the same paper. Specifying the candidate models as $\operatorname{AR}(1), \ldots, \operatorname{AR}(15)$ and retaining the latest $\lfloor n d\rfloor$ observations in $\left\{S_{t}\right\}$
for performance evaluation, we measure the prediction capability of a criterion by the empirical MSPE (EMSPE),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{EMSPE}=\frac{1}{\lfloor n d\rfloor} \sum_{t=n-h-\lfloor n d\rfloor+1}^{n-h}\left(S_{t+h}-\hat{S}_{t+h}\right)^{2}, \tag{S6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d=0.3, \hat{S}_{t+h}$ is the predictor of $S_{t+h}$ whose order is selected by the criteria and parameters estimated by least squares using observations up to time $t$. In this connection, we also compute

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{EMSPE}_{0}=\min _{1 \leq k \leq 15} \frac{1}{\lfloor n d\rfloor} \sum_{t=n-h-\lfloor n d\rfloor+1}^{n-h}\left(S_{t+h}-\hat{S}_{t+h}(k)\right)^{2}, \tag{S6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{S}_{t+h}(k)$ is the least squares predictor of $S_{t+h}$ whose order is fixed at $k$ and parameters are estimated by least squares using observations up to time $t$. Note that $\mathrm{EMSPE}_{0}$ serves as a convenient benchmark for comparing the EMSPEs derived from different criteria. Note also that the $\alpha_{m}$ in the $C_{n}=n^{\alpha_{m}}$ of MRIC is chosen by minimizing the in-sample counterpart of (S6.1),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\lfloor n d\rfloor} \sum_{t=n-2\lfloor n d\rfloor-h+1}^{n-\lfloor n d\rfloor-h}\left(S_{t+h}-\hat{S}_{t+h}^{\left(\alpha_{m}\right)}\right)^{2}, \tag{S6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

over $\alpha_{m} \in\{0.1, \ldots, 0.8\}$, where $\hat{S}_{t+h}^{\left(\alpha_{m}\right)}$ is $\hat{S}_{t+h}$ with order selected by MRIC using penalty of $C_{n}=n^{\alpha_{m}}$. Since the candidate models are nested, any $\alpha_{m} \in\{0.1, \ldots, 0.8\}$ leads to an asymptotically efficient MRIC, in view of Remark 2. For the sake of convenience, once an $\alpha_{m}$ is determined by (S6.3), it will be used throughout the period for forecast evaluation.

The values obtained from (S6.1) and (S6.2), with $h=1, \ldots, 5$, are summarized in Table S9. As shown in Table S9, MRIC appears to perform favorably compared to all other criteria. In particular, its EMSPE values are almost identical to the values of $\mathrm{EMSPE}_{0}$ for all $h=1, \ldots, 5$. The performance of FIC, AIC and GAIC is also reasonably good. The EMSPE of FIC is even a little bit smaller than $\mathrm{EMSPE}_{0}$ in the case of $h=2$ and 3. However, FIC may seem inferior to MRIC, AIC and GAIC when $h=4$ and 5. AIC and GAIC have performance close to that of MRIC, but their EMSPE values are either equal or greater than

MRIC's. All BIC-type criteria, BIC, GBIC and $\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$, suffer from relatively large EMSPE values, and hence are surpassed by the former four criteria. Finally, we remark that our conclusion on FIC, AIC and BIC is not necessarily coincident with the one provided by Claeskens et al. (2007). This may be due to fact that the performance measure used by the latter paper is EMSPE with $d$ close to 0.5 instead of 0.3 .

The second dataset contains three weakly time series of length $n=$ 508 for cardiovascular mortality $\left(M_{t}\right)$, temperature $\left(T_{t}\right)$ and particulate pollution $\left(P_{t}\right)$ in Los Angeles County over the 10 year period 1970-1979; see Shumway et al. (1988) or Example 2.2 of Shumway and Stoffer (2011) for details. The time series plots shown in Figure S2 of Shumway and Stoffer (2011) reveal that there are strong contemporaneous co-movements between these series. These authors therefore built the following model to describe the effects of $T_{t}$ and $P_{t}$ on $M_{t}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{t}=\beta_{0}+\beta_{1} t+\beta_{2}\left(T_{t}-\bar{T}\right)+\beta_{3}\left(T_{t}-\bar{T}\right)^{2}+\beta_{4} P_{t}+w_{t} \tag{S6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{w_{t}\right\}$ is a stationary $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ model and $\bar{T}$ is the sample mean of $\left\{T_{t}\right\}$. However, it seems difficult to use (S6.4) to predict $M_{t+h}$ when its contemporaneous explanatory variables, $T_{t+h}$ and $P_{t+h}$, are not available. To bypass this dilemma, we devise a (purely) predictive model,

$$
\begin{align*}
& M_{t+h}=\beta_{0}+\beta_{1}(t+h)+\sum_{i=1}^{L} \beta_{3, i} M_{t+1-i}  \tag{S6.5}\\
& +\sum_{i=1}^{L} \beta_{4, i} T_{t+1-i}+\sum_{i=1}^{L} \beta_{5, i} T_{t+1-i}^{2}+\sum_{i=1}^{L} \beta_{6, i} P_{t+1-i}+\sum_{i=1}^{L} \beta_{7, i} \log P_{t+1-i} \\
& +\epsilon_{t, h}, t=L, \ldots, n-h
\end{align*}
$$

where $\epsilon_{t, h}$ denotes the error term. In this study, $L$ is set to 156 , namely, all dependent variables lagged up to three years are included. The reason why we adopt so many lagged variables is that the sample ACFs of $\left\{M_{t}\right\},\left\{T_{t}\right\}$ and $\left\{P_{t}\right\}$ are still significantly bounded away from 0 even after lag 150; see Figure S2. We also include $\log P_{t}$ and its lagged values because $\log P_{t}$ has been used by Shumway et al. (1988) as an explanatory variable for $M_{t}$. Due to the inclusion of the lagged variables and the retention of the latest $O_{1}=35$ observations for forecast evaluation, the sample size for model selection is reduced to $N_{1}=n-h-L+1-O_{1}$. On the other hand, the number of candidate variables in model (S6.5)
is $p_{1}=5 L+1=781$, noting that the intercept $\beta_{0}$ is always included in our study. Because $p_{1}$ is much greater than $N_{1}$, following Example 3 of Section S5, we first use OGA to sequentially select $K_{n}=5 N_{1}^{1 / 2} / p_{1}^{1 / 4}$ variables, and then choose models along the OGA path using the criteria considered in the same example. Their performance is evaluated by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\mathrm{EMSPE}}=\frac{1}{O_{1}} \sum_{t=n-h-O_{1}+1}^{n-h}\left(M_{t+h}-\hat{M}_{t+h}\right)^{2}, \tag{S6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{M}_{t+h}$ is the least squares predictor of $M_{t+h}$ based on the model selected at time $n-h-O_{1}+1$ and the parameters estimated at time $t$. Although the estimates of the unknown parameters are continuously updated throughout the period of forecast evaluation, we choose not to update the model once it is determined at time $n-h-O_{1}+1$ because $O_{1}$ is relatively small compared to $n$. For $\operatorname{HDIC}_{h}, \omega_{n}$ is still given by $\log n$ as in Example 3 of Section S5. On the other hand, instead of setting $2 / q=0.3$ or 0.4 , we choose $2 / q$ to minimize

$$
\frac{1}{O_{1}} \sum_{t=n-h-2 O_{1}+1}^{n-h-O_{1}}\left(M_{t+h}-\hat{M}_{t+h}^{(2 / q)}\right)^{2}
$$

over $2 / q \in\{0.3,0.4, \ldots, 0.9\}$, where $\hat{M}_{t+h}^{(2 / q)}$ is the predictor of $M_{t+h}$ based on the model selected by OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}(2 / q)+$ Trim at time $n-$ $h-2 O_{1}+1$ and the parameters estimated least squares at time $t$. The values of EMSPE, with $1 \leq h \leq 5$, are documented in Table S10. For the purpose of comparison, we also compute the following benchmark value,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\mathrm{EMSPE}}_{0}=\min _{1 \leq k \leq K_{n}} \frac{1}{O_{1}} \sum_{t=n-h-O_{1}+1}^{n-h}\left(M_{t+h}-\hat{M}_{t+h}(k)\right)^{2}, \tag{S6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{M}_{t+h}(k)$ is the $h$-step least squares predictor of $M_{t+h}$ based on the model determined by the first $k$ OGA iterations at time $n-h-O_{1}+1$ and the parameters estimated at time $t$.

As shown in Table S10, the performance of OGA+AIC, OGA+GAIC, and OGA + BIC is exactly the same in terms of EMSPE. In addition, the EMSPE value of OGA+GBIC is smaller than (the same as) that

TABLE S9
The values of EMSPE and EMSPE $E_{0}$ derived from series $\left\{S_{t}\right\}$.

|  |  |  | EMSPE |  |  |  | EMSPE $_{0}$ |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $h$ | AIC | BIC | FIC | MRIC | GAIC | GBIC | GBIC $_{p}$ |  |
| 1 | 0.0409 | 0.0533 | 0.0395 | 0.0393 | 0.0393 | 0.0533 | 0.0533 | 0.0393 |
| 2 | 0.0609 | 0.0756 | 0.0577 | 0.0594 | 0.0598 | 0.0756 | 0.0756 | 0.0593 |
| 3 | 0.0586 | 0.0764 | 0.0569 | 0.0575 | 0.0580 | 0.0763 | 0.0763 | 0.0574 |
| 4 | 0.0599 | 0.0817 | 0.0623 | 0.0589 | 0.0589 | 0.0817 | 0.0817 | 0.0589 |
| 5 | 0.0583 | 0.0815 | 0.0654 | 0.0583 | 0.0595 | 0.0815 | 0.0815 | 0.0583 |

of OGA+AIC when $h=1(h>1)$. Except for the case of $h=1$, $\mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim obviously outperforms the other criteria, and the difference between its EMSPE and the corresponding benchmark value, $\widetilde{\mathrm{EMSP}}_{0}$, does not seem to be sizeable. When $h=1, \mathrm{OGA}+\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}$ performs best among all criteria. For $1<h \leq 5$, its performance generally lies between OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim and the other four non- $\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}$ criteria.


Fig S1. Plots of series $\left\{S_{t}\right\}$ and its sample ACF and PACF


FIG S2. Sample ACFs of weakly time series for cardiovascular mortality (top), temperature (middle) and particulate pollution (bottom) in Los Angeles County from 1970-1979.

## References.

Chan, N. H., and Ing, C.-K. (2011). Uniform moment bounds of Fisher's information with applications to time series. Ann. Statist., 39, 1526-1550.
Chan, K. S. (1993). Consistency and limiting distribution of the least squares estimator of a threshold autoregressive model. Ann. Statist., 21, 520-533.
Chi, C.-M., Ing, C.-K., and Tong, H. (2017). Mean squared prediction error of a threshold autoregressive model. Manuscript.
Claeskens, G., Croux, C., and Kerckhoven, J. V. (2007). Perdiction-focused model selection for autoregressive models. Aust. N. Z. J. Stat., 49, 359-379.
Findley, D. F., and Wei, C. Z. (1993). Moment bounds for deriving time series CLT's and model selection procedures. Statist. Sinica, 3, 453-480.
Hsu, H.-L., Ing, C.-K., and Tong, H. (2018). On model selection from a finite family of possibly misspecified time series models, accepted by Ann. Statist..
Inoue, A. and Kilian, L. (2006). On the selection of forecasting models. J. Econometrics, 130, 273-306.

Table S10
The values of $\widetilde{E M S P E}$ and $\widetilde{E M S P} E_{0}$ derived from the mortality data of Shumway et al. (1988).

| EMSPE |  |  |  |  |  |  | $\widetilde{\text { EMSPE }}_{0}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $h$ | OGA+AIC | OGA+BIC | OGA $+\mathrm{HDIC}_{h}+$ Trim | OGA+GAIC | OGA+GBIC | $\mathrm{OGA}^{+\mathrm{GBIC}_{p}}$ |  |
| 1 | 20.75 | 20.75 | 18.99 | 20.75 | 18.38 | 17.60 | 16.79 |
| 2 | 26.63 | 26.63 | 21.89 | 26.63 | 26.63 | 26.77 | 16.68 |
| 3 | 36.02 | 36.02 | 22.90 | 36.02 | 36.02 | 31.29 | 16.54 |
| 4 | 27.51 | 27.51 | 23.45 | 27.51 | 27.51 | 24.08 | 16.31 |
| 5 | 31.48 | 31.48 | 24.22 | 31.48 | 31.48 | 31.48 | 16.55 |

Konishi, S. and Kitagawa, G. (1996). Generalised information criteria in model selection. Biometrika, 83, 875-890.
Lv, J. and Liu, J. S. (2014). Model selection principles in misspecified models. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol., 76, 141-167.
Shumway, R. H., Azari, A. S. and Pawitan, Y. (1988). Modeling mortality uctuations in Los Angeles as functions of pollution and weather effects. Environ. Res., 45, 224-241.
Shumway, R. H. and Stoffer, D. S. (2011). Time series analysis and its applications: with $R$ examples (3rd ed.), New York: Springer.
Sin, C. Y. and White, H. (1996). Information criteria for selecting possibly misspecified parametric models. J. Econometrics, 71, 207-225.
Temlyakov, V. N. (2000). Weak greedy algorithms. Adv. Comput. Math., 12, 213-227.
White, H. (1981). Consequences and detection of misspecified nonlinear regression models. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc., 76, 419-433.

White, H. (1984). Nonlinear regression with dependent observations. Econometrica, 52, 143-162.


[^0]:    Received November 2017; revised March 2018.
    ${ }^{1}$ Supported in part by the Ministry of Science and Technology of Taiwan Grants MOST 103-2118-M-390-004-MY2.
    ${ }^{2}$ Supported in part by the Science Vanguard Research Program of the Ministry of Science and Technology, Taiwan.
    ${ }^{3}$ Supported in part by a special research grant, University of Electronic Science and Technology, Chengdu, China.

    MSC2010 subject classifications. Primary 63M30; secondary 62F07, 62F12.
    Key words and phrases. AIC, BIC, misspecification-resistant information criterion, multistep prediction error, high-dimensional misspecified models, orthogonal greedy algorithm.

